

# 異世界転生

君との再会まで  
長いこと長いこと

アニツキーブラッザー





Isekai Tensei – Kimi to no Saikai made  
Nagai koto Nagai koto

vol.1

by Anikki Brother

Novel Updates

Translation Group:

TLsyosetsu

Idle Translations

Epub: [Trollo WN/LN EPUB](#)



**Sharkryu Vesparda**  
ヴェスパード魔王国の王。  
『魔拳』の異名を持つ魔王だが、  
その正体は…？

**Farga Elfarshia**  
フォルナの兄。  
世界的に有名な武人。  
信じられないほど口が悪い。

**Kamino Mina**  
朝倉リユーマの同級生。活発な  
性格で、リユーマがクラスに  
溶け込むきっかけとなった。

**Velt Jeeha**  
不良・朝倉リユーマが転生した、  
本編の主人公。ひねくれた性格  
だが、周囲からは愛されている。

**Ura Vesparda**  
シャークリユーの一人娘。幼くして  
高貴な品性を漂わせるお姫様ながら、  
寂しがり屋で甘えん坊なところもある。

**Melma Chassi**  
強面のラーメン店主。  
彼との出会いが、  
ヴェルトの人生を変える。

**Forna Elfarshia**  
ヴェルトの幼なじみで、  
エルファースシア王国の姫。  
勝ち気だが思慮深い一面もある。

## 主な登場人物

# Prologue: Dying Regret

Despite being a delinquent, I had gone on a field trip and died. No, I shouldn't have been the only one that died. I was beyond saving. I was often associated with bad people from middle school to high school. Whatever fights or injuries they gave me, I smiled and overcame them, but now it seemed that they were going to die with vacant eyes. But I could do nothing as I lay motionless.

The bus we were riding on was forced to go around a car to overtake it, but as the bus came to a sudden turn, it fell to the bottom of a ravine in the mountain pass. What they felt had gone beyond pain, to the point where they were paralyzed and unconscious. How disappointing.

From the time I was in middle school I survived the carnage of large scale fights. I was the strongest, I was arrogant, and a delinquent teenager. A bunch of us from different schools hung out and indulged ourselves, it was fun but empty. But I became a high school student and went on a school field trip because that girl was there.

'Uooooooooh, Asakura-kun's bike makes a pretty nice sound.'(????)

Whenever I did happen to go to school, only the bad people stuck around while everyone else avoided me. However, a single girl talked to me without feeling intimidated. She was annoying.

'Wait, Asakura-kun, can run really fast? I'd be happy if you did the relay for the athletic festival.'(????)

She was the type who was at the center of events and school life with her youth. She was the type who was outspoken and motivated and became the center of attention.

'Ehehehe~ Well~ I'm also taking the supplemental exams. Even though we're Japanese, why do we have to study English anyways? Math also makes no sense!'(????)

Moreover, she was a bit dumb. I was forced to take supplementary exams so I

wouldn't repeat a year. I always ended up seeing her because of that. She didn't have the face of a top class beauty. Nor were physical activities her specialty. However, she was eager about everything, and never got discouraged. She always showed her true self and made a lot of friends, and before I knew it I was caught up in her pace.

'Asakura-kun, you can't leave. It's because you've got an important role in the play. Yeah, with the tanuki costume.'(????)

(TN: A tanuki is a Japanese Raccoon.)

Before I realized it, the delinquent that I was began going to school, and came to be on good terms with the people who were previously afraid of me.

'Asakura-kun, what do you mean you can't go on the school trip?! Hey stop it! Listen, everyone's going to have fun.'(????)

She was noisy but easy to approach, so it wasn't all that bad.

"Kamino....."(Asakura)

I, who was given that sort of life by 'Kamino Mina', fell in love with her. However, she wouldn't wake up. That idiot's stupid grin is gone, and my other classmates will never open their eyes again.

I really wanted to keep talking to you. There were so many things I didn't get to tell you because I was too embarrassed. A short thank you, and, "I love you. Go out with me." I always wanted to tell you that.

# Chapter 01: Death. Rebirth. Another World. Is This Fantasy? What Do I Do Now?

I remembered myself as Asakura Ryuuma, but that was around the time I was celebrating my eighth birthday as 'Velt Jeeha'. Since then, it's been two years. I became a ten year old and nothing has changed, I haven't gotten anywhere. Every once in awhile, when there's nothing to do, tears spontaneously come out of my eyes.

"Velt, what's wrong? The other day you were also crying on your birthday weren't you?"(????)

Honestly, I didn't understand myself. Am I Velt Jeeha or Asakura Ryuuma? Have I been born again as Velt Jeeha, and am living with the memories of Asakura Ryuuma? It's just, even though the parents I share blood with are there, nowadays they are looking at someone else.

"Mother."(Asakura → Velt)

"Did you see a bad dream?"(Mother)

Aruna Jeeha. 26 years old. The one that gave birth to me, Velt Jeeha's mother. A beautiful girl with matching red hair, famous among the nearby commoners. She was a doting parent that spoiled me to the extreme in my rebellious age.

"Hahaha, Velt is really cute isn't he? Then, want to sleep with mama and papa today?"(Man)

Similarly, there was my doting father, Bonapa Jeeha. 29 years old. With short blond hair, he was solidly built with an expression accustomed to hard labor, though when he has his wife and child in his sights, he becomes sweet.

(TN: Deredere/デレデレ was replaced by sweet, go google it.)

"Since I don't sleep well with you, I'll sleep by myself. It's annoying."(Velt)

"Ooooh, mama～Velt's becoming an adult now～"(Man → Bonapa)

"But, calling mama and papa annoying, punishment punches! Bad! Bad! Bad!"  
(Mother → Aruna)

Velt Jeeha, 10 years old. that's my current identity. I inherited my mother's red hair, but since I had a rebellious and cheeky look in my eyes, I wasn't cute. However, on the contrary my parents disregarded that about me and dotingly fawned on me. Even till now I resisted, but that feeling was growing stronger. When I was Asakura Ryuuma, my parents had basically disinherited me, so I didn't know anything like familial love. Because of that, I was somewhat uncomfortable.

"Listen up~Velt. In yesterday's class at school, I heard you did something during the levitation practice test."(Bonapa)

"Oh, I haven't heard of this?"(Aruna)

"I was working in the fields, when the teacher came over crying. The subject was using levitation to move a jar from one side to another, and it seems you violently threw it!"(Bonapa)

Aah, something like that did happen didn't it. That's because I can't use anything like magic.

"Wow! If you couldn't do it you'd run, but you found a way to do it on your own, how great!"(Aruna)

"You think so too right mama? What an exciting way to do it, papa is happy!"(Bonapa)

This area was surrounded by wheat fields as it was an agricultural zone. There were no such things as electricity, cars, or convenience stores. The main mode of transport was a horse. The neighborhood was separated into intervals and each household had several buildings.

However, it couldn't be considered the countryside. You would be able to reach Elfashia Kingdom's royal capital in about 30 minutes. I constantly go back and forth, as 'Elfashia's Magic School for Children' is in the city.

The capital city has several million people. The basic necessities of life were satisfied, the technological and magical cultures were developing, and there was little crime. It was a peaceful kingdom. However, even then, this world was vastly different compared to Asakura Ryuuma's world

"A fantasy world, is it. It's no wonder I haven't adjusted to this world."(Velt)

I died, then was reborn in this medieval-like fantasy world with a new life. I don't know if it's right or wrong, but this is the best answer I could come up with.

"You haven't gotten used to it? What's wrong, Velt? Don't tell me you're being bullied at school! Unforgivable! Which noble's kid is it? Papa will beat them up!"(Bonapa)

"Eeeh? Velt~ If it's painful you can tell mama anytime you know? Even though I can't use magic, mama will protect Velt. With my mama-punch, take this, and that!"(Aruna)

At any rate, I'm always thinking, are these people okay with this? When I was Asakura Ryuuma, my parents were annoying, but isn't this unpleasant? I've been rather spoiled, and I haven't taken advantage of my parents. That is, with Asakura Ryuuma's end, my blood-related parents don't think of me as a stranger.

No, not just my parents, everyone that I've met in this world say the same thing. Nobody knows my true self. In this world, nothing was normal for me, and because of that, I feel uncomfortable.

"But, Velt, if you're actually being bullied, tell us, okay?"(Bonpa)

"I won't. Instead, let me cry. Or rather, Your son to this day can't even use basic magic,

I'll get failing grades and be right on the path heading towards being a dropout in school! If it's dad, then he'll get angry and hit me!"(Velt)

"Hahaha, What are you saying? Papa doesn't think you're someone who can't keep up in school. As long as you're there and full of energy, papa will think of it as a perfect score."(Aruna)

"That's what I mean, if you spoil this idiot son, then I'll go down the wrong path! As a test try to get mad at me! Come on!"(Velt)

"I-I see~. It can't be helped~ then.....Bad!"(Bonapa)

".....Mother, I'm hungry. Hurry and make food for me."(Velt)

Good grief, how far are my parents going to dote on me. I disregarded my



father, who casually opened his newspaper at the table. Nowadays, I could read this world's characters. Although it doesn't seem like I've adapted to it, I feel like I've gotten used to it. As I was thinking like that, something on the spread open newspaper caught my eye. There, was a picture of a very young boy carrying a sword.

"Hmm. A youthful 12 year old hero defeated the Kaiser Commander'Shishiten Ajin'. Ho~ Although we aren't that different, he's participating in a war. Mister obedient huh~"(Velt)

"Even though you're ten years old, once in awhile you say something really philosophical like that. You make papa worried."(Bonapa)

Although I was given a new life in another world, there wasn't anything special about me. In this world there were different species such as demons and demi-humans. And though there were conflicts with humans every day, in this country various groups existed in different territories so there wasn't anything in particular like an open war.

Most of all, there were the existences of heroes.

Once again, I myself didn't have any special ability, nor did I have a gift for magic. With regards to my previous life's knowledge, for a delinquent with no common sense there was no use for that sort of crap. In other words, there was no sort of god that gave me some sort of mission, I was just some farmer's kid living on through my second life.

Because I realized it when I was ten years old, it was all the more to consider.

For what reason was I given a second life in this world?

For what reason did I have to remember my life as Asakura Ryuuma?

## Chapter 02: The Same-Aged and Persistent Princess

"Excuse my entrance!"(????)

Suddenly, the door of my house was opened immediately after it was knocked on. Since it's made of wood, it'll be broken if you're careless right? However, the one who entered did not care in the slightest.

"I've heard, Velt! You made a mess during yesterday's practice examination! If you have an excuse, let me hear it!"(????)

I let out a sigh from the bottom of my heart. With long blonde hair and a dominating aura, she had the hot temper and looks of a noble's daughter. She wore a black one piece dress underneath a red mantle with an emerald brooch as an accessory. Her face was really cute, but she had an attitude where she looked down on other people, and she was just ten years old. Well, she's the same age as me though.

"Oh? Princess Forna, welcome."(Bonapa)

"Good day, Princess. We've just started lunch, would you like to join us? Today I've made consommé."(Aruna)

My parents greeted her like it was completely normal, it seems she was generally liked. Then, the moment the brat looked at me, she let out a smile.

"Ah, obasama, I will accept your offer."(Forna)

"Also, will Guard Captain Galva join us as well?"(Aruna)

"Well now Aruna-dono, I am grateful."(Galva)

And then, for some reason or another that person appeared. It was a giant man packed with muscles in red armor nodding with a smiling face. What a pain.

(TN: Literally "troubling (things) have come," but it doesn't translate well from Japanese to English.)

"By the way, Velt. I heard about yesterday's matter. You've continued to refuse my special training invitation for magic to this extent, and therefore that

would be the result wouldn't it?"(Forna)

"Whatever, just shut up already. I can't do anything with magic, and I ain't interested either."(Velt)

"Don't joke around! For example, in the future you will need the minimum magic techniques related to working in the fields! With great trouble, I've requested approval from father as well as the headmaster of the school for your enrollment."(Forna)

"You're noisy."(Velt)

"*Muu* Velt you dummy! Are you not planning to work in the future? Am I going to be the only one working once we're married?"(Forna)

"Wait, why do we have that relationship?"(Velt)

"If I won't do it, nobody else would to marry you! For the sake of mankind, it is unforgivable to neglect the continuation of your family."(Forna)

The nation is at peace, and this is a good example of what comes from it. Even though it's a fairly large country, the princess of the whole country is regularly visiting the house of a commoner. Of course, a guard had come along. This girl, Forna Elfashia, this country's princess, is my childhood friend of the same age. When she was around five, she willfully escaped from the royal capital and got lost in the fields, having us take care of her until she was escorted back to the castle. Then, she often came by to drag me out along with her. But, that was back then, and when I recalled my memories as Asakura Ryuuma, I just thought of her as a elementary school kid. Dealing with her has been troublesome.

"Velt-kun. I think that learning the minimum degree of magic would be better, don't you? You often fight with your classmates and make them cry, and in any event if you faced someone who has learned how to use swords and magic, the outcome is obvious."(Galva)

"Uh huh, even though you're just a guard, you've been eating in someone else's house from the beginning haven't you?"(Velt)

"T-this is tasting for poison, Ah, no, it's not like I don't trust Aruna-san you know! It's just, since my favorite food is consommé."(Galva)

Generally I assumed that those of higher social standing wouldn't associate themselves with commoners. However, in this world, this country was different. The relationship I have with Forna made me somewhat famous, the royal capital's soldiers pass by giving me friendly greetings, the nobles, and even the king calmly invited me to the castle. It was that kind of happy life. Yet, even then, I couldn't smile from the bottom of my heart.

"So, what are we going to do about them?"(Velt)

When I noticed, my father and the guard captain had been enjoying themselves since noon.

"Ooh, is that true?"(Galva)

"Well, that's how it was. Velt announced that he was able to use fire magic, took a match and without permission my treasured alcohol. Then, he held a bit of it inside of his mouth, and since he in one breath blew upon the lit match, burnt a straw doll. Well, although you'll be dizzy after using up all your magic, since the teacher's pupil collapsed after drinking, the teacher came to me in tears."(Bonapa)

"Hahaha, that's real exciting. Velt-kun's heroic tales always make me smile."  
(Galva)

That's some serious neglect of duty. The two were laughing with red faces while holding a conversation, they completely looked like close friends.

"Stupid old man."(Velt)

"Stupid guard captain."(Forna)

The ten year old kids were disgusted by the development. Or rather, will this country really be okay?

"Jeez, if papa and even captain Galva are going to be like this, then they'll continue forever. How troublesome~"(Aruna)

And yet it doesn't seem like you're going to stop them, mother, right now you're committing the same offense you called troublesome. Then, from the kitchen, my mother took out a sack of wheat flour the size of a child.

"Hey Velt. Can I send you on a little errand?"(Aruna)



"Eeh? Sounds like a pain."(Velt)

"Please～Look, this time it's a request from a proprietor who opened a restaurant in the imperial capital. The proprietor doesn't have enough wheat flour and contacted me for a direct delivery of it."(Aruna)

What a bother. Going to the capital on foot as a child, I'd rather not go that distance. But as I was going to somehow refuse, I was hit on the back of my head.

"Stop being irresponsible, Velt. If you're a man, you can do at least that much."(Forna)

"T-this kid."(Velt)

"Who are you calling a kid?! You're the one who's being an unreasonable kid! And by the way, obasama, I will be heading out with Velt. Please let us know the name of the shop."(Forna)

"Aah, princess, as always thank you very much."(Aruna)

"No, it's alright. This is also because of how Velt is, so there's nothing else I can do. It'll be no good if I can't keep Velt under control."(Forna)

"Fufufu, if the princess holds him down, then Velt's future will be secure. Then, please accept my request."(Aruna)

The conversation forcefully continued without my approval. When I was Asakura Ryuuma, I didn't do anything like requests.

"Umm, if I recall correctly from the neighbor that handles the magic tool shop, the name of the restaurant is 'Tonkotu Ramen'."(Aruna)

(TN: I'm fairly certain this is referencing Tonkotsu Ramen, minus the s.)

"...What?"(Velt)

I don't get the name.

"What kind of food do they serve?"(Velt)

"That is, well, I don't quite know. But, from what I've heard it seems to be a dish that nobody has eaten before."(Aruna)

Something that nobody has eaten before? That's kind of suspicious. Honestly,

food is the only thing that hasn't changed between my life now and my life as Asakura Ryuuma.

Beef, pork, fish, and vegetables, there's even rice and bread. There's also salt and sugar for food, and now I'm thinking about my past world. If I'm talking about luxury, I'll be happier if I had soy sauce and miso, but I don't know how to make it, so it's pointless to think about it.

"Well, even though I don't know anything about it, I got it. I'll be your gofer."  
(Velt)

"Obasama, We'll be off now. Galva will call for someone to pick us up afterwards."(Forna)

All things considered, a commoner accompanying the country's princess on an errand is pretty ridiculous. Rather, what the hell do I do if we get attacked? There's no meaning in having the guards then. Well, it'll be hard to track us down in this country full of peace-loving idiots.

No, or is it that this is how the culture of this world is? Ever since I recalled my actual identity as Asakura Ryuuma, a few things seem to have become strange.

(TN: Princess Forna uses 'obasama' which usually refers to another person's mother. 'Mother' in English can be used when talking to the mother of the person you're married to. Forna and Velt aren't married, nor is there any indication they are betrothed, but Forna uses the word anyways.)

## Chapter 03: Seems Like My Future Wife

I remembered something from a little while ago.

'Waaaaaaaaaaaaa'('???)

'Shut up already. Stop crying～If you came this far then it's a place you know right?'('???) 'Hey, Velt! Be friendly.'('???)

'Making a young girl cry is bad!'('???)

Five years ago, our family found a very young girl while on the way to the capital. The child was the princess of the kingdom, who stealthily escaped from the royal capital to the outside and had gotten lost in a wheat field, whom we then took care of.

'But, but, I thought I wouldn't find anybody.'(Forna) 'What, so weak.'(Velt)

'Eeeh!? I'm scaaaared.'(Forna)

She continued to roam around while nobody was walking through the fields, and her loneliness, anxiety, and fear had reached its peak In the instant she was reassured by meeting me, all of her emotions were let out as tears streamed down her eyes. However, even though I didn't have Asakura Ryuuma's memories, I was still a rebellious kid that wasn't sensible nor gentle when I spoke.

'Hey, you, think I'm scary?'(Velt)

'Fue? .....No.'"(Forna)

'Then, it's alright. You don't know right? In this field I'm the number one baddest guy around you know?'(Velt) When I think about it now, I honestly didn't understand the meaning of my words. Rather, it's embarrassing.

'.....Yeah!'(Forna)

And so, the brat felt something reassuring from me and was for some reason relieved, causing her to regain her composure. After that she tightly squeezed my hand, refusing to let go until we reached the castle. Even Forna was a cute kid at that age. However, a few days later, Forna had discovered that her

magical talent towered above the rest. Since she realized that she was also stronger than the average me, she completely changed her attitude, and now acts as if she is the older sister.

"Hey, Forna"(Velt)

"What is it?"(Forna)

"Have you umm, ever been to another country?"(Velt)

Before I knew it she had joined her hand with mine, humming a song. When I asked, she had a surprised look, then smiled.

"I am a princess. It is natural that I attend parties and events in foreign countries, even though we are at war with them right now, I have interacted with demons and demi-humans before."(Forna) Although she was a brat who lost her way in a wheat field and cried, in just a few years she had become a splendid individual that I admired a bit.

"*Sigh* Whatever country and whatever race, it seems like just another trivial matter for you doesn't it? Just like going out and visiting a commoner's house."(Velt) "No, I used to think that way as well, but when I spoke about it to the prince of another country, he laughed at me with scorn. That really irritated me! No matter how much I told him about Velt, obasama, and ojisama, being intimate with low class commoners was impossible for high class nobles like him to understand, I was in a crisis I could not manage. Either way I was really irritated!"(Forna) (TN: Obasama and ojisama refer to Velt's parents, Aruna and Bonapa respectively.) Well, what the prince said was the truth, wasn't it?

"Even though that prince told me he was my fiancé, I completely refused him."(Forna) "*Sigh*"(Velt)

"Wait a minute, Velt, are you listening?"(Forna)

"Aah, the prince pissed you off right?"(Velt)

"Not that part, the part where I refused him as my fiancé!"(Forna) "Oh, I see."(Velt)

"W-Why, even though I refused the engagement, you do not want to know the reason?"(Forna) "Because he pissed you off right?"(Velt)



"T-that is true, but, you see, since a few years ago I had already decided who was going to be my husband."(Forna) "*Sigh*"(Velt)

"*Fufufu* Velt, do you know? Do you know who I am going to marry in the future?"(Forna) "I don't particularly mind who it is."(Velt)

"Do mind it!"(Forna)

This precocious brat. And she's noisy too. Although our bodies were of the same age, even if someone proposed marriage to her it wouldn't be surprising. Well, whoever her partner is, it'd probably be the same. As expected, for me, I loved that person.

"Kimino.....Mina....."(Velt)

"Kimino Mina? What's with that all of a sudden? Who is that?"(Forna) "Huh?"(Velt)

Who? That's right, she was someone nobody knew, she was a girl from Asakura Ryuuma's school back in his world.

"I have..... someone that I like."(Velt)

"Aah, I see..... Eh?"(Forna)

Even now I remember. From how loud she was to the fussy smile that matched her, it was a spectacle that never escaped my eyes. But I can't do anything. It's annoying that I *couldn't* do anything, and since I remember Asakura Ryuuma's memories, no matter how many times I remember, it still frustrates me. If anything, if I were reborn in my original world, I would be crying in front of her grave.

"*U-u-u, UWAAAAAaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa*"(Forna)

"Oi, why are you crying all of a sudden!?"(Velt)

"*Hic Hic* W-who is it!? Who is that girl!? Who in the world is she!?"(Forna)  
"Huh? She's doesn't have anything to do with you."(Velt) "No way, never! Velt, Velt is mine! No! NO!"(Forna)

Why, and for what reason, was I reborn in this world? I want someone to tell me what I should do.

"Oh, Velt made the princess cry!"(Soldier A)

"Oh my, keep your lover's quarrel in moderation, you two."(Soldier B) I then realized that we finally made it to the royal capital. A large circular wall encased the capital, with a gate located in each of the cardinal directions. Guards were stationed at each one of these enormous gates. However, there was no need for formalities, a commoner child and the princess were holding hands and entering was a charming sight that made them smile.

"Aah, it's Velt, and he's holding the princess' hand～They're husband and wife～Hyu Hyu!"(Soldier C) "Forna is crying! Velt made her cry! That's no good, no good you know!"(Soldier D) "Oi, Velt! Some good fish came in boy. The other day, your dad took care of us. Come take our reward for him later!"(Soldier E) Stalls and houses were lined up on our right and left, and people were going back and forth. In a way that's how a large country should be, but everyone greeted Forna and me like it was natural, I felt bitter. Full of smiles and overflowing with energy, it was representative of a great country.

"Oi, quit crying already."(Velt)

"Uu, but, but."(Forna)

"Fine, if you become an amazing woman in the future, I'll marry you then."  
(Velt) "Really?"(Forna)

"Uh huh."(Velt)

"It is a promise then! It is an absolute promise!"(Forna) "Yeah yeah."(Velt)

Well, if by that time you still love me, we'll talk then. To be honest, there probably isn't much of a difference between kids and their first love in this world and my previous world. As for me, things going on around me are going to become a pain. Hurry up and stop crying so I can finish this errand, I want to go home.

Then, at that moment, I heard the sound of hooves gradually approaching from a distance. As I turned my head, there was a knight straddled on a horse, but he vigorously passed through the gate without stopping.

"A messenger!"(Civilian A)

A great number of people had noticed, and the knight shouted.

"The Bolbardié Kingdom has collapsed! It was devastated by 'Demon King Vesparda's Forces'! The nation's alert level has been raised! Please refrain from leaving for a period of time!" (Knight) Something like this unexpectedly happened, and hearing the report of the collapse of another country, the expressions of the carefree group of people changed.

"Bolbardié did? That's the country on our western border!" (Civilian B) "By Vesparda, you mean 'Dragonshark' of the 'Seven Great Demon Kings' country? There was a rumor they brought some very tough demon warriors with them, but what happened to the people at Bolbardié? Don't tell me, did they kill all of them?" (Civilian C) "Wait a second, then will this country be next.....?" (Civilian D) "It, it'll be fine right? Bolbardié is a fair distance away from this country." (Civilian E) Forna said it before, war. Along with this war came the phrases 'magic' and 'other world,' I was drawn to the things that would normally be at the edge of our reality.

"That Bolbardié Kingdom was destroyed? Unbelievable." (Forna) "Hey Forna. Was that country also at war?" (Velt)

"T-that is..... Do not worry. With this country's strength and the presence of heroes on the 'Human Continent', the demons and demi-humans will not be able to easily move their forces." (Forna) Our hands shook as we held them together. We're just kids. I myself understand this fear fairly well.

"It will be alright. If push comes to shove, I will protect you, Velt." (Forna) Even though she was surprised, she told me she would protect me. I could only admire this elegant figure. More than that, I was pathetic.

"That's no good, to be a brave girl and think like that." (Velt) "What do you mean?" (Forna)

"Even if you protect me, I'll be troubled if you die for me." (Velt) We should have been similar, but I felt as though the war between different races had nothing to do with me. However, since my memories as Asakura Ryuuma returned to me, I could only understand this much.

"In this world, having my precious woman die in front of my eyes is more painful than death." (Velt) Even now, I recall the injured figure of Kamino many

times over. I won't let something like that happen again. What the? Why is this brat making such an intoxicated expression?

"*Ufufufufufu*"(Forna)

"Huh?"(Velt)

"*Fufuun*, Velt!"(Forna)

"Wha— stop clinging onto me!"(Velt)

"Velt, I promise I will never die. Whatever it is, demons, demi-humans, I will not lose."(Forna) "Uhh, maybe you misunderstood something?"(Velt)

"Velt is so manly, it's lovely."(Forna)

I don't particularly mind what you said, but if I tried to clear up the misunderstanding you'd probably cry a lot, so won't you stop?



## Chapter 04: A Piece of Home

We went to quickly deal with the task so we could return.

"Leaving the mission aside, well, that was definitely strange. Ah, here it is. ....urk!?"(Velt)

"Velt, what is it, ew! W-what is this, this disgusting smell?"(Forna)

We found the restaurant. The exterior didn't look any different from a restaurant or bar. The problem was the smell. More than that, hot air was coming out of the building.

"Wait a moment, is this place really a restaurant? Even though there isn't a pleasant smell coming from it..."(Forna)

I'm sure it's disgusting for her, but I couldn't feel the same way. It was a really appetizing smell. No, it wasn't just that, it was something that I remembered I dearly missed.

"Let's try going in."(Velt)

"Uuu, I guess nothing can be done. However, what's this? As expected of a place that has just opened, I am curious about the fact that there are customers here."(Forna)

The inside of the restaurant was completely occupied. The apron-wearing employee was hurriedly running around.

"Hey, welcome!"(????)

A lively voice spoke out to us. It had come from the lone man deep behind the counter. He was dressed in oil-stained but otherwise completely white clothing with a towel wrapped around his forehead. He vigorously waved something in his hands up and down into water.

"Alright! How many for table six?"(Man)

"Yes, two orders of Tonkotu Ramen for table six."(Employee)

"You idiot! I told you before didn't I!? Your pronunciation is wrong!"(Man)

"Hiii- but manager, it's difficult to pronounce. Even the customers said so."  
(Employee)

The man was this establishment's owner. He had a small figure, but surprised the guests seated in his store with his scary face and strong voice.

"Manager, umm, there's another customer requesting for a fork."(Employee)

"Manager, here as well. This 'chopstick' seems to be impossible to eat with."  
(Employee)

This is the first time I have been shocked since I was reborn as Velt Jeeha. Having another country brought to ruin by the demons was a small matter for me. My entire body was swaying and trembling.

"You kids, for two? By the way, you're from Jeeha-san's place right? And with the princess! Are you by any chance here from an errand by your mother? Or rather, intimate as usual aren't you two?"(Employee)

It was one of the shop employees, a young woman, an acquaintance we had passed by many times on the streets.

"Yes, obasama said that there was a request for wheat flour. Are you helping out this place?"(Forna)

"Yes. My father was the carpenter who helped build this place, and with that relationship I've come to work here since I am paid."(Employee)

"It seems difficult, doesn't it?"(Forna)

"It is, I didn't think it would be this difficult~ More than that, the manager is scary."(Employee)

"It certainly seems that he is a rather loud cook. Is he from another country?"  
(Forna)

"That's what it looks like. I'm sure he was taught somewhere in the east."  
(Employee)

As for me, I could only hear half of what the two were saying. But even then, I was agitated.

"Milfa, how long are you going to talk!? The customers are waiting! What are

you going to do if the soup gets cold!?"(Man → Manager)

"Hiiii I-I'm sorry, manager. But, look, it's the Jeeha's boy!"(Employee → Milfa)

"What? Ooh, you kids brought that here right? You're helping your mom with an errand? That's great!"(Manager)

The manager covered in oil heartily rubbed my heads and hair, making me disheveled. As you would expect, Forna didn't like it, and hid behind my back.

"That was delicious."(Customer)

"Thank you very much, we will wait for you to come again!"(Manager)

The manager spoke as he bowed his head to the customer, and promptly cleaned up the empty bowl. Afterwards, he looked over his shoulder and gave us a smile.

"Oi, kid, little girl, you have my gratitude. It'll be this man's treat, go ahead and eat."(Manager)

Since two seats opened up right then, the manager wanted to give his thanks by having us eat.

"Gratitude you say, what will you do? Hey, Velt? Velt?? Are you listening??"  
(Forna)

"....."(Velt)

Forna was honestly puzzled, but she would elegantly take into consideration the kindness of others, even though she was a child. She diligently bowed and took a seat. However, I didn't say anything, I couldn't do anything, I simply took a seat.

"Excuse me, what are these small sticks?"(Forna)

"Ah, those are called 'chopsticks', they're eating utensils. Actually, they're exciting to use but the most difficult to use to eat."(Manager)

"Chopsticks? I have never heard of it before, *uuu*, I am not, skilled enough. Do you eat with this?"(Forna)

"Hahaha, I'll bring out a fork. Whenever you get used to it, it'll be good to try eating with them. Here."(Manager)

He presented two bowls for Forna and I. Within the soup-filled bowl, long, narrow strings-like things were submerged underneath and clumped together, while above the soup were pieces of meat used as a topping.

"I certainly have not seen something like this before. Velt, you will also need a fork."(Forna)

I didn't take a fork. I took two of the so called chopsticks from the large quantity within the round cylindrical container on top of the table, and ate the Tonkotu Ramen. I thought it would be vulgar, but I ate it with a slurping noise.

"Velt, how come you are using a chopst..... Hey, your manners are bad! You're eating it while making a slurping noise!"(Forna)

I didn't mind. I couldn't stop my hands from bringing the food to my mouth.

"Uu, uuuuuuu"(Velt)

"Huh, Velt? W-wa-, you're, why are you crying?"(Forna)

My tears wouldn't stop. I remembered. As a kid, Asakura Ryuuma had eaten this. When I returned to school, when I went along with my bad friends. At the athletic festival, the school festival, with my classmates when we were having a party I think?

"K, kid....."(Manager)

When I realized it, the manager also stood in front of me with a shocked expression.

"It's good, amazing, it's really delicious, old man."(Velt)

It was delicious, and above all I was happy. I didn't think I'd ever be able to eat this again. I thought that nobody would know the things I was familiar with. But I was mistaken. Therefore, I was going to make sure by saying something he knows the meaning of.

"Hey, old man."(Velt)

Since nobody knew, I started to think that my memories as Asakura Ryuuma were a wild delusion. But that was wrong. I didn't know whether it was real or not before, and endlessly worried about it until I found a piece of home in this place. My memories weren't some fantasy, and seeing this proved it. Asakura

Ryuuma, his world, and Kamino Mina, I was now sure that they existed.

"W-what?"(Manager)

While I held back my tears and snot with everything I had, I let out the words that the inhabitants of this world wouldn't know.

"Old man, can I get a *kaedama*?"(Velt)

"Hm!?"(Manager)

(TN: Kaedama can mean double, but in this case, he specifically means to add a second serving of noodles.)

Today, with this, the shop had no choice and closed down. It was because the store was simply not in a situation where it could continue as it was. The manager fell onto his knees and let out his tears, and before I knew it we tightly held onto each other.

## Chapter 05: My Reason to Live

Forna was forced to go back. She wanted to know how bad the circumstances were, but she didn't want anyone else to hear. It's fine for her childhood friend and her parents I guess. Tonkotu Ramen quickly closed and the tidying up was completed, so that it could open up another day. Everybody, including the customers and employees, were sent home, and the only two left in the restaurant were me and the manager.

(TN: There was some ambiguity in the last chapter, the restaurant is closed because of the recent incident concerning Bolbardié, it'll open again one day... maybe.) "Velt Jeeha-kun, ten years old eh."(Manager)

"And the old man's name is Melma Chassi right?"(Velt) "Right, even though we've exchanged our names, it sounds kind of weird."(Manager → Melma) "It's a self introduction right?"(Velt)

We sat side by side on the counter seats, and started a conversation that the people of this world wouldn't understand.

"I'm Asakura Ryuuma, a second year student from Kyokawa High School."  
(Velt) At that moment, the manager stiffened.

"NO WAAAAAAAAAAY!!!"(Melma)

"It's true, or rather, who are you?"(Velt)

"Uuugh, Asakura? You were Asakura! I'm Kobayakawa, your teacher!"  
(Melma) H-Huuuuuuuh!?

"Whaat!? You, you were Kobayakawa-sensei!?"(Velt)

It was my turn to be surprised.

"Yeah I was. Hey, is this for real? I didn't think I'd meet the class' biggest problem child again."(Melma) "Well, I never thought that I'd be able to eat ramen ever again, and to think you were the one that made it."(Velt) "However, why have you become so small!? Ten years you said? The last time I saw you was in high school right?"(Melma) "I don't get how I ended up like this either."  
(Velt) "I see, but how do I explain it. There's no way to."(Melma) "Yeah, I don't

think so either."(Velt)

Somehow, the manager's true identity was my class' homeroom teacher. I remember well. He was a spirited and enthusiastic teacher, and never once faltered against the delinquent that I was. Despite that, I remember him always being concerned for me. Ever since I started going back to school, Kobayakawa seemed happy.

(TN: He doesn't call him Kobayakawa-sensei it seems.) "Hey, Asakura, how far back do you remember?"(Melma) By how far I remember, he means my past life.

"Up until the bus fell on the school trip. I remembered everything two years ago."(Velt) "Is that so. Then as I thought, we've all died in that incident and if I'm not mistaken been given life in another world, right?"(Melma) "Yeah."(Velt)

At that instant both of our memories ceased. Therefore, we were able to confirm that the same phenomenon happened to us.

"Hey sensei, when did you remember?"(Velt)

"When I was around 20 years old. I was a cook at a restaurant in the Rolvan Empire to the east."(Melma) "Right now, how old are you?"(Velt)

"32. When I was Kobayakawa I was 51 years old. It feels kind of weird."(Melma) "Then, to this day it's been more than ten years since you've last seen me, it must have been lonely."(Velt) Loneliness. Not in the sense that you're somewhere far away, but it was a word that only we understood.

"By the way, I got married in this world when I was 19. Even now my wife is well mannered, sweet, and wholeheartedly devoted to me. However, ever since my memories returned, I have had some mixed feelings even though I'm happy."(Melma) "I see. Which reminds me, I'm sure sensei was also married in our original world."(Velt) "Yeah, I had a wife and children. I wonder how they're doing right now, how their lives have been ever since I died, I'm always worried about them. However, I couldn't open up and talk to anyone about this. This is the first time , ever since I was reborn as the man named Melma."(Melma) I haven't yet, perhaps I'm lucky that way. It's only been two years since I remembered everything. But, this man has been tormented by anxiety for more than ten years.

"But, to be able to meet the delinquent such as yourself again, I didn't think it would be able to save my spirit."(Melma) "I mean, I didn't think I'd be able to eat Tonkotsu Ramen either."(Velt) "Yeah, ramen, eh. In this world without a trace of Japan, I can make cuisine as a chef. Using the memories of my past life, I've been able to reproduce the soup and noodles after ten years. If I had the internet, I'd have even more interesting recipes."(Melma) "The internet! Hahaha, I didn't think I'd miss hearing such an ordinary word."(Velt) For the first time in a while I was able to smile from the bottom of my heart. Thinking about it, of all the things that have happened throughout my rebellious age, today might be the happiest day of my life. Well, Kobayakawa..... No, it's the same for Melma. Even as the day ended, we would never tire of talking to each other. And after however many hours later, when it would be bad to return any later, there was one last thing I had to confirm.

"Hey, sensei. Do you think we're the only ones that ended up like this?"(Velt)  
"....."(Melma)

By that, I meant being able to meet each other again.

"It might be that I died instantly. I don't know anyone else who died."(Melma)  
"Right, I'm sure that not everyone died in the accident, but I know at least one other person that did."(Velt) "What?"(Melma)

"Before I died, I was conscious for a short time. Just before I lost consciousness, I saw that person had nothing left."(Velt) It wasn't a pleasant conclusion. In reality, it would have been better if that person didn't die. However, if she died, is it fine to assume that she was also reborn in this world?

"Kamino Mina."(Velt)

"Kamino Mina you say? .....I see.....the child most unlikely to die."(Melma)  
"Well, if she survived then everything will be fine. More than that, she wouldn't have crossed over. But if she was in this world like us....."(Velt) I would want to meet her.

If she carried the same feelings as us, I want to save her from it.

No, that's wrong, it would just be showing off.

The real reason is much more simple.



I just want to meet her.

"You, it's thanks to Kamino that you started coming back to school isn't it?"  
(Melma) "Wha—!"(Velt)

"Well, with the exception of you, everyone else had already figured it out."  
(Melma) "Wha— S-seriously!? It's not like I told anyone!"(Velt) "Just looking at you made it obvious. But it's the truth isn't it? That girl dragged you back to school, and you changed. You even made friends."(Melma) It wasn't a lie. Of course, I still kept on getting into fights with bad people. However, I regularly participated in school and class events, and opened myself up to those around me.

"Well, she was someone who helped you, right? Therefore.....you'd want to meet her.....if she was in this world."(Melma) When I realized it, I saw the one that shouldn't have ever been there in my mind.

"Sensei, I've decided. I'm going to travel around the world, and one day, I'll find Kamino."(Velt) Why was I reborn?

What was I supposed to do in this world?

I've finally discovered the answer.

## Chapter 06: If I Don't Have Any Talent, I'll Work My Hardest

To put it bluntly, Velt Jeeha has no outstanding talents. My teacher and those living in this world seem to be able to use elementary level magic, while I have yet to be able to use magic at all. I don't particularly mind being unable to use magic. However, if you were to head out into the world, you need to be strong in order to protect yourself. The level of peace in this country is unique, if you were to leave, you'd encounter thieves and kidnappers. If you passed through human territory, you'd face several different types of demonic beasts that attack people. And most of all, in this world, the various races mutually continue to divide themselves in conflict. Although I thought that to myself, even when I took the lessons at the magic school seriously, the result was terrible.

"Well, I'm not too sure. It's not like I knew too much about manga or fantasy before. Something about magic power being the natural life energy of the world, too many different kinds of magic, and somehow the language for invocation is hard so it's a pain." (Velt) "Hahaha, you've got that right. You have memories from the time you were Asakura Ryuuma, it might be hard because of that. I don't have any ideas in the first place unlike you though." (Melma) Going to my teacher's shop to have ramen and chat has now become my daily routine. I arrive around lunchtime and stay till halfway through evening so that there would be fewer customers, allowing us to talk without hesitation. Well, since I recently haven't been eating at home, my mother's been pouting.

"Sensei, is there easy to use and convenient magic that, like, goes *boom*?" (Velt) "If there was something like that I would've known a long time ago. Besides, would a cook go about asking questions like that? For something to that extent, ask your wife to teach you. She's rumored to be a genius isn't she?" (Melma) "To lower my head to that brat would be unpleasant. If I requested something from her, she'd be super happy and full of herself, she'd also demand something in exchange." (Velt) "Gahahahaha. But, for that Asakura Ryuuma to be flirting with the princess of another world, what a development."

(Melma) "Cut it out will you? At any rate, after a few years she's going to turn her back on me."(Velt) Still, Forna being called a genius is the truth. Her everyday life consisted of essential and artisanal magic techniques. Furthermore it seems she learned a great deal of offensive magic. In a manner of speaking, she had the ability to fight without the need of an escort.

"By the way, how does sensei use magic?"(Velt)

"Hm? Well~ For example I use levitation to move tableware and flames for the sake of cooking, but it's not that big of a deal. It'd be the same degree of difficulty as having tools or extra hands."(Melma) "That's how it seems~ I'll do my best from now on, but I don't think learning that would be useful on an adventure. As expected, how do I put it, something like combat skills to survive? I wonder..."(Velt) "Rather, why not learn how to use the sword or spear?"(Melma)

"Well, I don't really like flashy things. It'd be kinda unfitting for a delinquent."(Velt) It's not like I'll refuse to use a weapon in a fight. However, I don't like people using sharp things.

"Besides, I don't want to be carrying a sword or spear with me all day. I want a more fun way to show my power."(Velt) Well, if there was a way to do that then everyone would be doing it.

Then,

"Hey, Asakura. Comparing the ramen I made and the ramen from back home, what do you think?"(Melma) "Huh? It's pretty good, but what's up with that all of a sudden?"(Velt) "Don't worry about it, that was a pretty genuine comparison! In your previous life which restaurant had the best tasting ramen?"(Melma) "U-uuh? W-well, since the raw ingredients are different~ In my previous life as Asakura Ryuuma, the best tasting ramen restaurant was definitely the place at Ikebukuro I think? But what about it?"(Velt) I didn't understand but I answered and sensei glared at me as he held his kitchen knife.

"Progressing through my life as Melma, I didn't have any talent in magic nor combat, but from the age of sixteen I built my way up from the bottom. Starting as a dishwasher, years passed until I was entrusted with cooking, and when I regained my memories as Kobayakawa I practiced the art of cooking ramen for

ten years. Even though I still have a ways to go I never gave up my pursuit of flavor."(Melma) "O-oh."(Velt)

"Remember well. No matter which world it is, you can learn and refine yourself every day."(Melma) That hit a sore spot. For the delinquent who has never accomplished anything, they were the most severe of words.

"Putting effort doesn't suit a delinquent."(Velt)

"Dying and being given a new life, change yourself!"(Melma)

"You've said enough haven't you? Even idiots can't be fixed."(Velt)

"Don't say it like you're some kind of cheeky brat."(Melma)

At that moment, the door was powerfully opened.

"Excuse me!"(Forna)

We turned our heads and at that spot stood a brat with golden hair rolls who had an obviously angry expression.

"That's the princess. Welcome. Or rather, with that expression.....do you need Velt for something?"(Melma) "Yo. It's been a few days since I last saw you, what's going on all of a sudden?"(Velt) Ever since I was able to meet sensei again, I've been constantly hanging around here so I haven't seen her in a few days. She doesn't attend the school of sorcery that I go to. It was because she had nothing else to learn. However, she always ambushes me at the entrance after school and invades my house, so she had pretty much seen me every day, but the last few days were different. From that, Forna noisily entered the restaurant, and violently sat on the chair next to me, and resolutely opened her eyes and yelled at sensei.

"Tonkotu Ramen, heavy on the flavor please!"(Forna)

In that moment, we were suddenly thrown off. By the way, in this restaurant, since I started using the words the words'kaedama'(second serving) and'kotteri'("heavy" in the context of food) some of the regular customers started using it.

"Got it, Tonkotsu with some heavy flavor!"(Melma)

The soup was thick and oily. The moment the ramen, which was unbefitting of

a young aristocratic girl, reached her, she removed the fork that was given to her. Reaching into the hollow cylinder, she took a pair of chopsticks and started slurping up the ramen.

"H-hey, princess!"(Melma)

"O-Oooh."(Velt)

With her face bright red, Forna desperately ate the ramen while making a slurping noise.

"What's wrong? This is the correct noise to make while eating this, is it not?"  
(Forna) "Y-yeah, that's right but.."(Velt)

"Do you have a complaint?"(Forna)

"Well, no, but.."(Velt)

"M-manager! Do you have garlic for me to use?"(Forna)

"Whaaat?! P-princess, do you understand what kind of thing that is?"(Melma)  
"Yes, it is an effective ingredient to nourish one's body, is it not?"(Forna) Garlic is one of the spices of this world. It's used to prevent sickness and to provide nourishment; an excellently healthy ingredient. However, its biggest fault is the strong odor, the people who eat garlic will have bad breath and body odor, it was really difficult for people who weren't used to it. But if we're talking about why someone would put it into ramen, it'd be because garlic is a substitute for ninniku, something from our original world. More than that, it was something that sensei discovered in his ten years of practice.

(TN: Ninniku also means garlic in Japanese, but in this world they seem to use the English pronunciation for it,) I couldn't believe my ears when Forna ordered it. But, Forna mixed the crushed garlic into her soup and once again began to vigorously eat the ramen. Gazing at this spectacle, I had realized something.

"Forna, you..."(Velt)

"What is it?"(Forna)

"The chopsticks, you can use them?"(Velt)

Until this day none of the regular customers were able to use chopsticks. I was the only one able to use them. But, even though Forna was somewhat

awkward with them, she was eating without a fork.

".....I practiced."(Forna)

"Eh?"(Velt)

"I, there's nothing that if Velt understands, I can't! I trained intensely in the castle!"(Forna) Forna, who had a sullen expression for a while, finally revealed a triumphant look. It seems like she was waiting for this moment. However, I was surprised. It was the correct way to use chopsticks, something that even the kids in Japan didn't remember. That is, it had only been a few days since she had met the manager. As expected, this brat might be a genius. And then, as if seeing through me, from an angle Forna couldn't catch, sensei poked my head.

"W-what are you doing?"(Velt)

I didn't understand the meaning of his actions, sensei was shocked, and he spoke in a low voice.

"The princess gave it her all practicing didn't she? Take a good look at her fingers."(Melma) Right now, I noticed. Although her fingers were joined together, on her tiny smooth fingers were calluses.

"It's true. It's only because her pride is so strong that she'd do that."(Velt)  
"You idiot. No matter how you think about it, she wants you to notice it doesn't she?"(Melma) "Whaa? Why would she want me to notice her using chopsticks?"(Velt)

"Listen up, will you? Since the other day you've constantly been here, you're usually with the princess right? That's why she's been practicing. Since she's able to eat with chopsticks now, you might praise her, you might even invite her to be with you."(Melma) Now that I think about it, she didn't have to go as far as putting in garlic. It's just that since I use it, she's also been using it I think. For some reason, now that I realize it, it's a little embarrassing.

".....Seriously?"(Velt)

"Children are children, pure and innocent right? Figure it out already."  
(Melma) However, coinciding with that I witnessed something dazzling. I intended to turn over a new leaf, but I hadn't tried anything interesting with my own effort. However, Forna continued putting in effort for her own reasons,

and the results bore fruit. A ten year old precocious brat. However compared to the one that had the mental age of a seventeen year old, she was much more amazing.

"Forna. You're great. The reason being, you're pretty cute aren'tcha."(Velt)  
"Oh? Eh?" (Forna)

(TN: He sure does have a terrible way with words.)

I spontaneously rubbed her head. With just that much, it was as if her head had become a chimney blowing out smoke. What an interesting person. Somehow, it wonderfully suits her. More than that I believe I've lost this one.

"Hey, sensei. If you've got some free time won't you come with me to the weapons shop?" (Velt) "Weapons shop? You've seen it along the streets haven't you?"(Melma) "It's not that. Just, I want to try looking for a sword again. However if you're under thirteen you can't enter, so come with me."(Velt) "Rather, what do you think of a former teacher going to a weapons shop with his former student?"(Melma) "Don't worry about it. It's against the law in Japan, but nobody will judge us here. That's just one of the unique things about this world"(Velt) With inspiration from Forna, I'll thank her with just this for today.

## Chapter 07: An Annoying Pattern

If it were the previous world it could become a tourist attraction, but the police would definitely intervene on the shop. A one-handed buster sword, a dagger for self defense, sets of bows and arrows, spears, cudgels made for adults, together with shields and armor to defend oneself with. Up till now I've never once come to this shop so to me it had the feeling of a museum. However, I was at a loss deciding what weapon I should use.

"I haven't come here before, but as expected of the royal capital, it's got a good selection."(Melma)

"Well I'm here to pick out a weapon. But, nothing really stands out right away."(Velt)

To be frank, when it comes to swords and spears, I've never touched a real one before, though I do have experience with wooden swords. In any case, in order to get used to it, I'm not sure how many years of training I'll have to go through. In any case, I should choose something that's easy to handle and that I'm familiar with.

"Asakura, what sort of style did you fight with"(Melma)

"Kicks. I'll kick and kick and kick. I didn't really punch much."(Velt)

"Ooh, you're pretty unusual."(Melma)

"But, in this world there are common demons and demi-humans who are several times stronger than humans, aren't there? I haven't met them before, but if that's the case then fighting unarmed is basically suicide right?"(Velt)

"Hmmm, I see～Have any experience fighting with weapons then?"(Melma)

"When I fought against a bunch of people, when my opponent took out a spiked bat, I struck back with a baton."(Velt)

"A baton? Is that really how you've been carrying yourself?!"(Melma)

"Buuut, thinking about that there ain't anything like a baton. It might be because it's a different age in a different world."(Velt)



If I were to use a weapon, it'd be good if it were something I'm experienced with. I've used batons and metal bats a few times before. However, as expected I don't see them. There are cudgels, but there aren't many kids that can carry something around like that.

"Whatsat~ Going to use a weapon kid? Even though we only sell to people over 13?"(Shopkeeper)

Looking over the figures of sensei and I who extensively looked through the shelves, the old man sitting on the chair spoke out to us.

"That's why, sensei is going to hand you the money and buy it for me."(Velt)

"Nonsense! The point is, like I said, a kid will be using a weapon that I'm selling!"(Shopkeeper)

Well, that's how it is. Since I wanted to smoke in high school one of my senpais bought it for me. But, even then I didn't leave.

"Hey, old man. I'm asking you. In this world I'm trying to get strong enough to protect my family and childhood friend. Especially since I don't know when the demons and demi-humans are going to come and attack with their armies."  
(Velt)

Everything was a lie. But, it's better to reason with the geezer. However, the old man had a weak response.

"Fu~n, you're a pretty cheeky brat for saying these things aren't you? As far as how much you've fought through, you should know this country's army isn't weak."(Shopkeeper)

"Er- well, that's true."(Velt)

"Even then, kid, come and stand over here for a bit."(Shopkeeper)

"Kay."(Velt)

Doing as he said, I stood in front of the old man. He silently looked at me from the bottom of my feet to the top of my head, and finally gazed right into my eyes. Or rather, there was a serious look in the old man's eyes.

"Fu~n, you're pretty dull huh. You don't have the hope, talent, or resolution."  
(Shopkeeper)

"Haa? What the hell are you saying all of a sudden? Or rather, what the hell can you see with your eyes you senile old man?"(Velt)

"Ooh, a boy without manners or sensibility. Well, getting to the point, you don't have the qualifications or the resolution to go about wielding a weapon, kid."(Shopkeeper)

"Resolution?"(Velt)

"You listening? You hold a weapon to take out your opponent, but you need the resolution to be killed yourself."(Shopkeeper)

At this time, I had a bad premonition. This pattern was a pain in the ass. This old man will be burdened with the responsibility of people hurting others, which is why he has to blab on about resolution.

"If you're going to injure someone you'll need to resolve yourself and take responsibility for becoming fit to do so. If you don't have the resolution nor the responsibility, don't even think about holding a weapon."(Shopkeeper)

Look here. Ever since the past, and in whatever world there is, there hasn't been anyone lecturing and twisting themselves over this as much as this guy. As for how it should be, kids shouldn't have to think about every single damn thing, right?

"What a pain....."(Velt)

"What was that?"(Shopkeeper)

"Well, although there are things that are important, I'm not interested. As for weapons, in my case I'm not wielding a weapon to injure someone, I'm wielding a weapon to protect myself so that I don't get hurt. With that, my chances of winning a fight and surviving will increase, and the rest is using it with the resolution to beat my opponent. I don't want to die, nor do I want to get hurt. As for taking responsibility, I haven't killed someone before, nor have I irrevocably harmed them. I don't know if I can go that far."(Velt)

What a stubborn old man. But somehow, it seems like I was talking back in retaliation. Without holding back, the stuff the old man talked about was perfectly righteous, but he spoke like he was looking down on people, which pissed me off.

"You're too honest, and all the more that I ain't selling to you"(Shopkeeper)

Well, that's what happened. The old man was also making a disgusted face.

"YOU IDIOOOOOOOOOT!!"(Melma)

"That hurts, sensei, don't hit me."(Velt)

"No matter how you think about it, what this person was saying is much more just than you!"(Melma)

"No, well that's true, but nonetheless."(Velt)

Sensei also got mad at me.

"Well, nothing I can do, I'll come again another day."(Velt)

Back in my life as Asakura Ryuuma, the old lady at the store calmly let me buy dirty books at the bookstore, but that doesn't seem to apply in this world. Although I say that, it'd be unreasonable to do so as in actuality I haven't even found a suitable weapon yet. From here, I suppose I could only obediently leave, and as I did,

"Oh? If I'm not mistaken is that Velt over there?"(????)

Suddenly a childish voice called out to me. As I turned my head, there was a young boy wearing trousers and a white shirt covered with a purple mantle.

"It's Shalt, yo."(Velt)

(TN: His name is written as "Shout," but the name will cause a mess later, so we changed it to Shalt.)

"Yaa, fancy meeting you here, something happen?"(Shalt)

(TN: They both say the equivalent of "yo" in Japanese and English, so I'll just leave the Japanese one as "Yaa" (やあ).)

With a figure overflowing with cleanliness, he had well-featured looks and silky blonde hair. He was slender and the embodiment of "well-bred."

"Asak— no, Velt, is he an acquaintance of yours?"(Melma)

"He's a classmate of mine at the magic school. He's the son of the kingdom's strongest, General Taira. Although he's weak he's the magic school's top

student. He got along with my parents, and is more or less an acquaintance."  
(Velt)

He's pretty much a classmate. There's nothing particularly special between us.

"Calling me weak, isn't that a bit mean, Velt? At any rate, what are you doing here?"(Shalt)

"I came here to look for a weapon. What about you?"(Velt)

"Haha, today is papa's day off. I came here to get a preview of my weapon."  
(Shalt)

"Papa?"(Velt)

In that instant, a chill ran up my back. I reflexively jumped to the side, then realized that there was a lone man standing behind me without knowing it.

"It's been a while, Velt. As usual, you've got a cheeky look on you."(????)

"Ta-Taira!"(Velt)

"Call me uncle Taira. Really, for the kid of Aruna to have such a rude mouth, unthinkable."(Taira)

He had a slender stature, narrow body, and was different from Escort Captain Galva; at a glance it looked like he had no strength. With youthfulness that made it seem like he would have no children, it was as if he were only ten years older than Shalt. Just looking at it, he looked like Shalt's older brother. Although it looked like he was in his teens, Taira was an older man. But, even though he was constantly smiling and didn't give off a manly feeling, he was the country's strongest spellsword and was well-known in foreign countries. I didn't have any interest in wars nor their heroes, and even though I've in reality never fought in a war before, I still knew of him. As sensei arrived in this country even he knew of him, and was surprised at the current state of affairs.

"Oi oi, like how you're with the princess, why is it that you're acquainted with these incredible people?"(Melma)

"It's not particularly like we're friends or anything, they're just people I know. Because of Forna, I've somehow become well-known."(Velt)

"My, isn't that mean, even though I thought we were friends."(Shalt)

"As usual you're a pretty twisted kid."(Taira)

I'm the son of a simple farmer yet I had these over-the-top connections. It wasn't unreasonable for sensei to be shocked.

"Speaking of which, I remember seeing the princess. When I was on the way here with papa, we passed by her. You guys weren't with her?"(Shalt)

"Haa? It's not like you should think we're always together you know? I'll do things at my own convenience."(Velt)

"You really are selfish aren't you. One day, you're going to become part of the royalty in this country, so you should at least have a bit of composure when the time comes, right?"(Shalt)

?

"Shalt, why is it that I'm going to become part of the royalty?"(Velt)

"Isn't it obvious? That's what's going to happen when you marry Princess Forna right?"(Shalt)

"Oi, why are you saying that with such a serious look?"(Velt)

"Likewise why are you responding like that? Just the other day, you made a ruckus with Princess Forna and proposed to her right?"(Shalt)

"What?? I didn't friggin' do something like that—..... Wait, could what I said have been interpreted like *that*?"(Velt)

I did say that I'd marry her if she became a good woman, but was this taken as an actual proclamation?

"I've heard of it too. From the maids to the guards in the castle, even the king was talking about it happily."(Taira)

This is a problem. From parent to child, why were they all smiling?!

"Well, you should think of taking responsibility as a man. When you become the king, Shalt will have become a general right? If that were to happen, this country would be safe."(Taira)

And this is the bad part about this country. From the nobles to the top brass

of the army, even though our societal positions were separated like heaven and earth, there was no such thing as a fixation on one's social status. Normally, something like a peasant becoming the king would be taken as a joke, otherwise causing a disturbance. Nonetheless, right now it seemed that starting from Taira and Shalt, everyone was wickedly letting out their true feelings.

"Hey, Asakura, is it better for me to from now on start selling (ramen) to you with flattery?"(Melma)

"Stop it, sensei. When it comes to treating me, doing so like when I was in high school is good enough."(Velt)

Rather than feeling awkward It was uncomfortable. That's honestly how I felt.

"I've had enough of this, I'm heading back."(Velt)

"How difficult, since we've met after such a long time, let's go and eat cake after this."(Shalt)

"I'm going to enjoy myself with some nice, rich cake."(Taira)

I didn't have anything else to do, so I'll immediately make my way back. As I was thinking that on my way out,

"I've kept you waiting, General Taira. This is the rapier I've produced for your son's personal use."(Shopkeeper)

"Let's have a look."(Taira)

What?

"WAIT A SECOOOOOOOND! What the hell's the meaning of this, old man?! You gave your opinion earlier but now you're selling weapon to a noble's son?! That's bullshit! He's also ten year's old!"(Velt)

"You fool, don't compare your shallow self to Shalt-sama! Shalt-sama has the potential to go with the hero and bring an end to this period of darkness. His readiness, resolution, they are clearly different from yours. Shalt-sama is special!"(Shopkeeper)

Urgh, I couldn't deny it. Certainly Shalt's talents are comparable to Forna's. He's mature in spite of being a kid. But even then, I who had the mental age of a seventeen year old had lost to a ten year old, so it's fine if I feel down about it.

"Now now, let's calm down. Nonetheless, Velt, I'm surprised you want to carry a weapon. Did something happen?"(Taira)

I'm a ten year old brat who's going to save this world. But it's actually that I'm going on a journey to search for the girl that I love who might be out there, so I wanted a weapon to defend myself with. How am I supposed to say something so embarrassing?

"Nothing at all."(Velt)

"Fufu, could it be frivolous circumstances you can't talk about?"(Taira)

It's embarrassing so I'm not going to talk about the situation. Or rather, if I told them my reason, Forna would beat me up. But, Taira was interested in something and took a little look at my condition,

"Alright, Velt. Just for a bit will you show me how far you're willing to go?"  
(Taira)

"What?"(Velt)

"It's a connection from you being my son's friend. If you're able to land a single hit on Shalt, then I'll grant your wish. How's that? Won't you show me your resolution?"(Taira)

Not good. It's following the most annoying pattern.

## Chapter 08: Don't Call Me Childish

It was decided much too quickly. This wasn't just a small fight, with the observers around us it wouldn't be a problem if it were considered a duel. Before we knew it, a crowd of spectators had gathered outside of the weapons shop, surrounding Shalt and I as we faced one another.

"Since combat practice starts next year, you haven't fought me before, right Velt? Today is a good chance. As the son of General Tiara, I'll show you the pride of House Sylvain with my strength."(Shalt) "That's pretty exaggerated. To the distant kid of a noble, this filthy dog will teach you a lesson."(Velt) Having said that, the flow of events was leading me to a fight with Shalt, and considering how we spoke, it was embarrassing. To begin with, even though he was facing me head-on, I won't lose in anything aside from this sad excuse for a conversation. Like a martial artist challenging a novice in the arena of a dojo, it was if Shalt wasn't going to lose. Between the two of us, Shalt is the one accustomed to fighting.

"Well then, are the both of you prepared? There aren't any specific rules. I will make the call if someone is unable to fight, or you can surrender. However, if Velt is able to land a single strike on Shalt, then it will be his victory."(Taira) The rule put on me by Taira seems simple, but in reality landing a single strike would be difficult right? It would take something like a miracle. I will certainly lose if I face him head-on, but I can't lose no matter what.

"Well then, begin!"(Taira)

With Taira's signal, Shalt drew his rapier and immediately began an incantation for a spell with his sword.

*"O militant Goddess of Wind within me, residing in my blood, I release thee.***Element Sword • Cyclone Saber!**"(Shalt) Read the atmosphere will you... Why would you use something dangerous like a sword wrapped in a tornado against someone who can't use magic.

"In a duel I will bring out every bit of strength I have. This is the pride of my ancestors, and the courtesy to my opponent! Now come, face me!"(Shalt) For a



seemingly slender brat, his spirit is overflowing with vigor. If he so much as grazes me, it'd probably blow me away and knock me unconscious wouldn't it? As for my weapon, it is a wooden sword made for training. I have no usable spells. There's only one way to win, "The way to win against this well-behaved kid is with my wisdom and experience of a method he's never faced before, right?"(Velt) I turned my back on him and walked toward the crowd of people.

"Where are you going? Are you scared?"(Shalt)

To the me that had suddenly turned my back on him, Shalt couldn't attack. The peanut gallery didn't seem to understand the meaning of my action. Well, it's fine if he doesn't understand. I began to mingle with the crowd, and looked back over my shoulder.

"What's wrong, Shalt? I'm waiting."(Velt)

"Wha— wai— what are you doing Velt!"(Shalt)

"Nothing really? It's just, I'm waiting for you where it's easier for me to fight you?"(Velt) Shalt opened his wide with a shocked expression. Taira and Melma seem to be surprised too.

I began to run through the crowd, causing a commotion.

"Hey, Velt. Isn't it dangerous for us for you to be here!?"(Crowd) "That's right, you should fight at the center. How are you going to beat Shalt if you just run away?"(Crowd) I'll get other people involved if I'm out here so I should go to the middle? That's not it, it's anything but safe.

"Velt, are you seriously doing that?"(Shalt)

Naturally, Shalt shouldn't be able to attack. He can't do so because of the possibility of hurting the people gathered here.

"You have to attack me if you want to beat me you know?"(Velt) "This guy... I'm a bit angry you know? Are you trying to threaten me?"(Shalt) "Threaten? Don't say something so foolish. Aren't you just scared of me?"(Velt) "Wha, what are you even saying?"(Shalt)

"Even though I can hear you, are you afraid of attacking, because you might get the crowd caught up in it? Or is it that you're afraid of me?"(Velt) Shalt is at

a loss for words. On the contrary, he's trembling from having been found out. Not sure what to do, Shalt appeared to appeal to Taira for what to do next. However, Taira didn't say anything. He didn't stop my actions either. He simply looked upon the two of us in silence. At Taira's silence, Shalt seemed to have a conflicted expression and undid his magic.

"Hmph, if that's the case I won't use magic, and defeat you with my swordsmanship instead." (Shalt) Here it is. He's going to resort to just swordplay. So as to not involve the others, he's going to aim directly for me with refined strikes, and take me head-on. It was, well, somewhat strange to me. I want to make fun of him a bit for being all too serious.

"Shalt, your opponent can't use magic, did you think about that for even a second?" (Velt) "!!" (Shalt)

"Take this! Finishing move," (Velt)

Appearing directly in front of Shalt, I used my special attack.

"PISS SHOOOOOOOOOOOOT!!" (Shalt)

"WAI-WAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!" (Velt)

I pulled down my pants for a second, and shot piss towards him. There's nobody who could have expected this. Surprised, he jumped back. However, you cannot space out for long in the middle of a fight.

"There!" (Velt)

"*Guh... Ur, urg, ueegh.*" (Shalt)

I delivered a kick straight to his stomach. He had an expression as if he was about to throw up.

"And another!" (Velt)

Since he stopped moving, I immediately did a low kick. He's just a 10-year-old kid. Because he could use magic, his endurance was just that of a regular child. I did squats to strengthen my calves, so once should be enough for a weak child.

"*Kaha, ah, gaha, ugh.*" (Shalt)

He can't breathe well after one kick to the stomach. My leg felt numb after

delivering the low kick. He can't concentrate or use an incantation anymore. Now, if I give him an axe kick to the head while he's bent over...

"Hey, are you alright? Maybe I hit a little too hard." (Velt) "*Buha, ah, gaha, urgh.*" (Shalt)

"Ah, take it easy and pull yourself together." (Velt)

Well, anything more than this really would be overboard wouldn't it. I patted the back of the immobile Shalt. Either way, even if I don't do anything else, he can't do anything. That's what I thought, so I decided not to attack again... which means...

"You idiot! You think I'll accept this?" (Crowd)

"You, I thought you were just a bad kid beyond any help, but this cowardly way isn't how a man fights!" (Crowd) "You're the worst, Velt!" (Crowd)

The crowd was booing loudly.

"Wh— why! I didn't do anything particularly bad!" (Velt)

"It's how you went about it! Something like pissing at him, that's the worst thing you could have done!" (Crowd) "Don't screw with me! Compared to the cyclone sword, what I did was a lot safer!" (Velt) "You don't have any pride as a man!" (Crowd)

I thought it would be fine because I'm a child. Well, if Asakura Ryuuma did it as an elementary school kid, would his head have been beaten into a different shape by his dad? I didn't go overboard because it's just a fight between kids, and used what I thought was the safest method, did they really not understand that? But for some reason, sensei had collapsed. Could it be that even my high school teacher was affected?

"*Kukukukukukuku.*" (Taira)

However, there was just one person who could be heard laughing in the midst of all the booing.

"Ahahahahahahahahahahahahaha! Ah, I give up. This is the first time in my life I've ever seen a special move like that." (Taira) Even though he was crouched next to his son, he was laughing loudly by himself. Seeing this sight,

the booing settled down, as they all became confused.

"I seem to have underestimated Velt, just a little bit. He's overwhelmingly weaker than Shalt, and yet he overwhelmed him."(Taira) Where nobody would admit my victory, Taira was different. There was no anger or criticism, only an expression of admiration. But, there was a child who would not accept that.

"Not yet!"(Shalt)

Shalt jumped up from where he was previously keeled over, and flourished his sword. I instinctively took some distance, he is clearly mad.

"I won't, accept this loss, Velt. As a man, with no pride nor conviction in your actions, I cannot praise you!"(Shalt) Calming his breathing and recomposing his mind, Shalt prepared his sword. But, the rule was...

"Get him, Shalt!"(Crowd)

"Shalt, give that bad kid a beat down!"(Crowd)

"Even if this idiot becomes the king, it'll be fine because Princess Forna and Shalt will be there."(Crowd) It should have been my win after one hit, so why are they getting riled up like this. To make sure I looked at Taira, but he didn't say anything and smiled. This bastard, he changed the rules however he wanted. If that's how it was going to be, there was no point in having done something as embarrassing as shooting piss.

"But well, there's no proof of having broken the rules. Unreasonable things like this happen quite often after all."(Velt) It can't be helped. Shall we dance? I'll play with him a bit longer.

"Hey, General Taira, you sure it's fine to not put a stop to this?"(Melma)  
"Fufufu, which one of them are you worried about, Melma?"(Taira) "Both of 'em."(Melma)

"Is that so? This is a good opportunity for me so I want to watch a bit longer. Someday, my son might run into someone who doesn't care about fighting fair with pride and honor."(Taira) Shalt began an incantation. Compared to the large amount of magic of Cyclone Saber, it was a spell with a small range.

*"O flowing tears of the Goddess of Ice, pierce the heart of evil!Ice Shot!"*(Shalt)

A small chunk of ice. It's weak and probably doesn't have much power. Even though he's angry, he's obediently using a small and controlled magic.

"I'll return that right back to you with this batting strike!"(Velt) I planned to break it into a bunch of small pieces, and struck it with my wooden sword.

But it didn't break.

Rather, at the moment of impact, the sword began to freeze.

"What the, the hell is this!?"(Velt)

"Crap, Asakura! Let go of it fast! You'll freeze too!"(Melma) "Woah, that's dangerous."(Velt)

Though I let go of the wooden sword and avoided a disaster, it was still dangerous... not. I wasn't naive enough to give him an opportunity by being relieved.

"I've got you!"(Shalt)

"Sheesh, ...too naive."(Velt)

Shalt came at me as I lost my weapon, thrusting with his rapier. Though he probably plans to stop just in front of my face, it's too honest. Even though the movement was elegant, he's still a child. Too slow.

Lowering my center of gravity and evading Shalt's stab, I grabbed his fluttering mantle, and pulled it between his legs and up into his crotch with all my strength and knocked him over.

"Gya...O, owowowowowow."(Shalt)

"*Kuhahahaha*, Though it's a symbol of pride for nobles, doesn't the mantle get in the way during a fight?"(Taira) "Grr, Velt!"(Shalt)

"Woah."(Velt)

Shalt got up immediately and began swinging his sword. Though he was still full of spirit, there should be quite a bit of stress built up.

"Come on, bring it, the devil is right here."(Velt)

"You, wa— wait right there!"(Shalt)

I ran around in circles this time. Shalt may overwhelm me when it comes to magic and techniques, but I've got the stronger body between us.

"You, *haa, haa*, wait! *Haa*, Why won't you fight fairly!? How can you possibly be a man!?"(Shalt) "You've already seen what I've been doing for some time now right?"(Velt) "That's not the problem, it's about a man's pride!"(Shalt) "What's a man? I'm just some kid who hasn't even kissed a girl before."(Velt) "Haven't you done things with Princess Forna before!?"(Shalt) "Aah... W-well there's that... But well, I think I understand how boys and girls are together more than you? Well, since I know from my previous life."(Velt) "I don't get what you're saying! Fight me! Fairly!"(Shalt) It's just like a fight between kids. Well, by a fight between kids, it just means that Shalt's been recklessly flailing around. As expected he's a kid isn't he. He doesn't understand how a fight works. With his stamina, as long as he keeps swinging around he'll quickly exhaust himself.

"*Haa, haa, haa, kuu*."(Shalt)

His feet stopped, here's my chance. I'll give him another low kick.

"Take this!"(Velt)

"When di- Aaah!"(Shalt)

"And another!"(Velt)

"Uaaaaaah!"(Shalt)

While he was in pain I hit him again. With this his feet had completely stopped. I hit him so he wouldn't be able to take another step.

"Velt....."(Shalt)

"Don't look at me with those hateful eyes. It's that you're strong. If we had fought at a practice area or dueling grounds, then I'd probably be beaten instantly. But this is a street fight. Everything here is my weapon. With the set rules (or lack of rules), it was already your loss."(Velt) "With those tricks, do you think I'm going to yield to you? I haven't lost yet! I'll show you my pride!"(Shalt) "Ah ha, if that's the case, then let's move a bit more to the center. If we're too close to the peanut gallery then it'll be dangerous right?"(Velt) "Eh?"(Shalt)

"UUURAAAAAAAAAAH!"(Velt)

"WUAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!"(Shalt)

I gave another low kick with all my might. It wasn't so my leg would go numb, but delivered so that it'd completely destroy my opponent's will. Shalt, who looked completely dumbfounded, had already lost the strength in both of his legs, so he hit the ground with his rear, and was no longer in any condition to stand up again.

"Look, for me it was a fight between kids, and for you it was a duel right? Don't look away so easily."(Velt) "*U-Uuuuuu, ku.*"(Shalt)

Why didn't I win? That was, quite possibly, what Shalt was thinking.

"W-what was that, Ve-Velt you... That wasn't just unfair... But he made it a fight like that."(Crowd) "He— He's... A fiend..."(Crowd)

The peanut gallery's mood was ruined, huh. However, calling me a fiend was pretty mean. There are countless other people out on the street that are more ruthless. But, fiend or not, the result is the same. The winner had already been decided.

"That's enough!"(Taira)

Up until now Taira was quiet, but he had finally gotten his lazy ass up and came in between me and Shalt.

"That was magnificent, Velt. Up until now I didn't think you'd be able to get so close to Shalt. But throwing out your shame, pride, aesthetics, and using everything available to you for victory, that sort of dynamism and spirit is in a sense, the strongest form of combat."(Taira) There was no sense of sarcasm. Even though I had beaten up his kid he didn't seem to be angry.

"Truly unbelievable. By provoking him you interrupted his rhythm, and you struck as he exhausted himself by missing his attacks. Even more surprising was that in the face of his rapier and magic, you understood your opponent's range well and dealt with it courageously. Well done."(Taira) With true admiration, Taira applauded me.

"On top of that, you were able to calmly avoid Shalt's attacks."(Taira) And

then,

"This match, is Velt's victory!"(Taira)

With the announcement of my victory, the duel reached its conclusion.



## Chapter 09: What I, As A Foolish Child, Aimed For

Shalt has been pretty down. He's been sitting on the floor hugging his knees in the corner of the weapon shop.

"Oi, stop being like that and cheer up will you~ It's not like I was bullying you or something."(Velt)

"It's not that. It's just, it was shocking..... How weak I was... Even though..... I believed that I could join the hero and spread the light of justice....."(Shalt)

"Well, you were able to learn something good right? There are countless people in the world who won't play fair."(Velt)

"But....."(Shalt)

Our duel ended, the spectators dispersed, and the atmosphere of the royal capital returned to normal. Nobody agreed to the outcome, but either way I had pulled down Shalt's pants and gave him bruises with my low kicks, causing him to be unable to fight any further. The old man at the weapon shop told me I didn't have the qualifications, competency, talent nor readiness, but Taira said the opposite, giving me a seemingly frustrated look.

"Velt, have you not decided on a weapon yet?"(Taira)

"Hm? Ah, not yet. After all, there's nothing that gives me that sort of "pow" feeling. Rather, is it really fine for me to buy anything?"(Velt)

"Yeah. Today's fight was interesting after all. In addition, it was a good experience for the path Shalt is taking."(Taira)

Against my words of protest, Taira had raised his voice.

"If you're a kid like Shalt..... Then between the artisan Hasan's Lightning Blade and the favored sword of the Dragonslayers, the Dragon Buster Sword, it would be difficult for you to choose a weapon right away wouldn't it?"(Taira)

"It's not that, I don't know how to handle weapons like that you know. I want to carry around something shorter, lighter, and easier to wield."(Velt)

"Easier to use? But shouldn't you find a weapon fit for your spells? For

example, since Shalt's forte is in wind and ice magic which emphasizes speed, he is using a rapier."(Taira)

"I'm the opposite. I'll first find a suitable weapon, then learn spells to combine with it."(Velt)

Taira was unbelievably generous. For some reason he praised my efforts and offered to buy me a single weapon I wanted. With an amount of money I've never seen before, he mainly used this store which attracted customers and admirably carried out its duties without a problem. Well, it's not like I know how to properly wield a weapon anyways.

"Fu~n."(Taira)

"Wha-What is it?"(Velt)

"Well, it's as I thought. In a way it's shallow, but your way of thinking is a bit different."(Taira)

With Taira's words, I internally retorted with,"That's how it is."

In actuality, my mental age is 17.

"To tell you the truth, when Shalt first came to this store, he naturally demanded a strong weapon like the Dragon Buster Sword. As expected, he longed for the age of brave warriors, master swordsmen, and heroes. After thinking about that kid's constitution and magic techniques, I chose the rapier as his most suitable weapon."(Taira)

"Err, exactly what do you want to say?"(Velt)

"Kids pick up weapons because they yearn for them (heroes). However, you're a lot more pragmatic compared to when I met you, and you're even asking for a weapon focused on functionality. As I thought, you're not ordinary."(Taira)

"Heroes, huh... It's not like I have much of an interest in em'. In any case, it'd be fine if I were to become an old man that tends to his crops."(Velt)

"That... are you serious? Recently the princess has been borrowing agricultural books from the castle library..."(Taira)

"No, she's not related to it."(Velt)

A brat that doesn't seem to think like a child. That might be how I am.

For example if we were talking about baseball, it'd be like a beginner aiming to be a pitcher or cleanup hitter. That's how children should be, full of possibilities. However, my way of thinking was efficient and unlike like a child's wasn't it. If I were to give an example, I would be the type of person who would start with the dream of bunting. Because of that, Taira was somehow internally conflicted due to me.

"Hey Velt. Don't tell anybody else about this, but in two years, Shalt will leave this country after he graduates and attend the Great Empire's national military academy."(Taira)

"The Great Empire's national military academy? By that, you mean in the center of the continent..... Where heroes and the like go?"(Velt)

"That's right. The center of the continent, where the royalty and aristocracy first began, the number one educational system in the continent where mankind's most talented child prodigies gather. The princess will also be going there after two years."(Taira)

I've heard about it before. The academic city where humanity's elites and the wealthy assemble. Frankly somewhere I have no fate with.

"So, what about it?"(Velt)

"Then, once those two graduate from the military academy... they will immediately enlist in humanity's united army."(Taira)

".....To participate in war?"(Velt)

"That's right."(Taira)

Even though it's not related to me, when it comes to someone I know participating in war, it's... Difficult for me to say. To be frank, there is war in this world, and I have heard of many countries falling to ruin from it, but I have yet to understand what war is. In my time as Asakura Ryuuma, the world I lived in had many wars. But, I didn't have interest in any of them. The majority of high school students wouldn't have any interest either. That is, I was in a world where I didn't have to take up arms to end a war, there shouldn't have been any anyone with eighth grader's syndrome who would either... War was

something I'd see on the other side of the television screen, it was a world with no relation to me.

(TN: 8<sup>th</sup> grade syndrome = chuunibyou syndrome. Basically where someone imagines fantastical things and daydreams of glory, and sometimes act upon it.)

With sarcasm, I asked, "I wonder, since General Taira knows that I have no intentions of participating in war, does he think I'm a coward? I'm in the same class and age as my childhood friend who wants to change the world with his strong will after all." (Velt)

However Taira didn't seem to mind with his response.

"It's not that. Shalt and the princess are hard workers, and aside from becoming powerful, they have clear goals in mind. That is what the other kids will also..... No, in this day and age, with children having natural talent in magic and combat techniques, that is how most of them will think. However, you have not participated in war, nor do you have any interest, as you've said. But I can't help to think that you have some sort of goal in mind. Exactly what are you trying to accomplish by gaining power?" (Taira)

Although I don't plan to participate in the fighting, what am I trying to do? It's not like I can say it, but If I had to state my intention.....

I sighed.

"If you wanted to hear it, it's not something grandiose. In the first place I had already said that I have no interest in war nor heroes, but rather than indifferent, it's more like I just don't know anything. The point is, I don't understand anything about the world you see." (Velt)

"Hmm. In that case, what is someone like you aiming for then?" (Taira)

"Like I said, It's not like I'm going out to do something big. If I had to say it... Regret... I have some serious regrets left from dying in my previous life." (Velt)

".....I see..... All the more I don't understand." (Taira)

"Listen, don't figure it out. It's possible that just about nobody in this world will understand you know." (Velt)

I'll let him in on this much.

Having died and been reborn in this fantasy world, I am now looking to find some sign of the girl I liked that I died with who may have reincarnated. With that, who the heck is going to believe me? For now, living with that as my objective will be fine. It doesn't matter if nobody understands.

"Well, it's those two's choice if they want to go to war, I don't want them to die, but I expect it would be a natural result..... Hm? That's....."(Velt)

At that moment, I had casually looked over and stopped my gaze at a mountain of boxes. Placed at the corner of the store were boxes with a mess of swords and bows sticking out.

"Old man, what's with these boxes?"(Velt)

"Ah, those are the goods that I can't sell anymore, I plan to dispose of 'em."  
(Shopkeeper)

"I see."(Velt)

"Right, when it comes to those things, all of their edges have been blunted to make it safe. Like that it'll be fine to just pick 'em up."(Shopkeeper)

"Huh, inventory disposal. Well, these worn out items wouldn't have much use as expected."(Velt)

They were just a bunch of useless items.

Thinking that, when I was about to abandon hope, something at the corner of my eye caught my attention.

"Ah? What's this?"(Velt)

It was something like the hilt of a sword. However, there was no blade. Despite that, it felt heavy and stiff.

"Ah, that's not a weapon ya'know? It's somethin' mixed in with the wholesale goods."(Shopkeeper)

"Not a weapon? Then, what is it?"(Velt)

"That's a Congo Demi-human tribe's teacher's cane."(Shopkeeper)

"Teacher's cane? Something that is as thick as a sword hilt?"(Velt)

"Umu. Try swingin' it down with some vigor."(Shopkeeper)

Doing as he said, I swung the cane downwards. I could feel the weight of the swing.

"O-Ooh!"(Velt)

"The Congo tribe members are no less than twice the size of a normal human being. Because of that, even somethin' like a teacher's cane would be as thick and heavy ta' match."(Shopkeeper)

Something like a teacher's cane... I had seen something like this before during Asakura Ryuuma's lifetime, but I'd never held one before. Despite that, I had found something that fit well in my hands. That is, rather than a teacher's cane, it seemed to me that it was nothing else but a flexible baton.

"Why is something like this in a weapon store?"(Velt)

"Umu, there was once a time where I was able to enjoy dealin' with the weapons of the demons and demi-humans, but that was unintentionally mixed in with the rest. There was no buyer for the teacher's cane, nor a way to use it, so I was thinkin' of getting rid of it."(Shopkeeper)

My heart began to throb, and in some way I felt something that I was lacking.

"I'm interested. So give it to me"(Velt)

"Ho? Is that really fine?"(Shopkeeper)

"Yeah. It's not a weapon, and it was going to be thrown away, so it's not a big deal right?"(Velt)

"U-Umu, well, it's not somethin' to sell anyways."(Shopkeeper)

As I thought, he's an old man. Why doesn't he realize it? With this, no matter how hard you hit, it'll be powerful. I guess he wasn't able to figure it out? No, he's the same as Taira.

(TN:Used to traditional weapons)

They stared at me in amazement as I chose something that wasn't made to be a weapon. However, it's convenient for me.

"Give me two of them."(Velt)

"Yeah, go and play make-believe with those things, do whatever you want."

(Shopkeeper)

I'm pretty sure I'll be laughing like a kid who's been playing tricks, but it's just because I've finally gotten something I've really wanted.

"O-Oi Oi, no matter how you look at it, is that really fine? I can buy something else for you, you know?"(Taira)

"This is fine. With the money, treat me to a steak instead. Right now, I've found something better for me than traditional weapons."(Velt)

"A weapon? Teacher's canes?"(Taira)

Once I left the store, I immediately prepared the canes in both my hands. Then, I began to fight an imaginary opponent. I would parried my opponent's attack with my left, and struck my opponent's throat with the right. Then I delivered a roundhouse kick. Not bad at all.

"It's a bit heavy for me right now, but I'll become accustomed to the weight soon enough."(Velt)

I was able to see clearly, and I will master these. Even though this is a fantasy world, it's not like I have to fight the way they do. With a way that has the most potential, I'll deal with what's to come at that time. I will deflect dangerous weapons with the sweep of my baton, and disrupt my opponents with kicks like I did in my high school days. Through fire and lightning, I will continue forward even without magic, this I swear to myself.

## Chapter 10: Parents

Though it was simply essential, I was able to purchase something good. The teacher's canes, which are basically batons, were placed in holders at the sides of my waist. Since they are very heavy for a child, it would take some time before I could get accustomed to them, but nonetheless I feel like I'll dual-wield them. Since I can't go about testing them on a human opponent, I'll go home and try it out by hitting a tree instead.

"But it's become really late. My overprotective mom and dad might be worried, so I'll hurry back..... What a pain."(Velt) I left Taira and the others with the usual, but while making my way back, my pace had slowed down. That is, since Asakura Ryuuma's memories returned, I have been able to reunite with my previous life's teacher, and though I have my conscience as Velt, my other conscience as Asakura Ryuuma has gotten stronger. When I think about it, Velt Jeeha's parent's love for him was a bit strong. It's not like I dislike them, but if I were asked whether or not I loved his parents, answering would be a bit difficult.

"Mom and Pop huh? They're a bit nosy, but well, it's not like I hate them or anything."(Velt) Recently I've been thinking over stuff like the future and magic, but these thoughts had come up out of the blue. However, these thoughts immediately dispersed.

"Eh?"(Velt)

Is that the color of the sunset? No, my field of vision was wrapped in flames, and in it I could see my house. I was immediately thrown off. Right now I was still trying to understand the situation.

But when I realized it my legs were moving at full speed.

"MOM! DAAAD!"(Velt)

What was happening? A fire? All thoughts had stopped and all I could do right now was scream.

"VELT, DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!"(Aruna)



It was the first time I had ever heard my mother yell that loud. Because of that, even though I was told not go any closer, I had no choice but to head towards them. And then, I saw it. My father bleeding from one of his knees, and my mother sobbing right next to him.

"DON'T COME HERE, VELT! RUN, RIGHT NOW!"(Bonapa) The moment my father's words reached my ears, a strange figure with a wicked smile was reflected in my eyes.

"What? A kid?"(Demi-human)

Its entire body was covered in pure, white hair. It had the face of a monkey and the ears as long as a rabbit's. Its limbs were abnormally long, within inches from touching the ground. From top to bottom it was nearly three meters tall. It was a demi-human. I understood that in an instant.

"That was close. But look at the flames, by the time the knights from the kingdom arrive it will already be over."(Demi-human) Why was there a demi-human here? Why was it attacking my home? No, that wasn't the biggest problem here. It's just that... I'm scared.

"I'll kill everyone."(Demi-human)

At the moment the demi-human uttered those words, my dad raised his axe as if possessed, and lunged at the demi-human.

"UOOOOOOOH! ARUNA! TAKE VELT AND RUN!"(Bonapa) "Dear!"(Aruna)

It's impossible. There's no way we can run. My dad doesn't have any experience fighting nor a great deal of magic to use. There's no way he can win against the demi-human by himself.

The demon faced my dad's spirit, grabbed his head with its long arm, and casually threw him onto the ground.

"Die."(Demi-human)

I was scared. I was trembling, I couldn't speak. But, at the moment I thought my father had died, I undid both of the holsters and took out my batons, shaking off my mother's screams restraining me and faced demi-human.

"This, this guy's a strange one!"(Demi-human) I put out all the strength in my

body and struck the demi-human's head. The recoil shot through my arm, a numbing sensation spread throughout my body. However, "Hm? Something tickles."(Demi-human)

If it had the body of a human, then it would've dealt a good deal of damage. But, this enemy had a body that was many times stronger and more fortified than a human's. Even if I were to hit him with the baton using slender arms of a child, there wouldn't be any damage.

"Hey, stop that!"(Demi-human)

There was a response. I had given him an axe kick on his forehead. If I can. ....The moment I thought that, the world had turned upside down.

"D-Don't! Don't lay your hands on my child!"(Bonapa) "VELT! NOOOOOO!"(Aruna)

Like my father, my head was restrained and I was thrown onto the ground. My power left my body. I couldn't breathe very well, and my vision was distorted. More than anything, my entire body was instantly afflicted with a pain to the extent that I couldn't even yell.

"A hindrance. Hurry up and kill them, take the wheat back. We can sell it in the country at a high price. Kaizer-sama died, leaving his position behind, but I will become rich."(???) The demi-human straightened its fingers and prepared to slash into my head. I took a good look, and could see the sharp fingernails glisten. It was without a doubt going to swing its fingers downwards and tear my child-like body apart. Am I going to die? Is this going to be the second time I face death? Am I going to die right after I've finally decided that I would search for Kamino?

"S-Save..... me....."(Velt)

It was the first time, including my past existence, that I begged for my life. I was so afraid, my tears wouldn't stop. Was it that I'm afraid that I'll actually die? This can't even be considered the result of a fight.

(TN: It wasn't even a fair fight, just a one-sided slaughter.) No.

I don't want to die.

I'm scared.

I'm so scared that I can't think of anything anymore.

"Not a chance."(Demi-human)

I'm going to die here. The moment I thought that, the demi-human swung his arm down, and fresh blood was splattered across my face.

".....Eh?"(Velt)

Fresh blood had viciously splattered all over me. However, it wasn't my blood.

"Velt..... please..... run....."(Aruna)

"Mom....."(Velt)

"Mama..... prote-....."(Aruna)

What happened? What just?

Her smiling face was right before me.

Her body had been pierced by the demi-human's hand, bathing me in her blood.

Mom..... Why.....

'I'll sleep by myself. You're annoying.'(Velt) 'Calling mama and papa annoying, punishment punches! Bad! Bad! Bad!'(Aruna) Why, why am I remembering these things now!?

"It was all a lie! I was just embarrassed!"(Velt) What am I saying?

"I was lying when I said you were annoying! It's just that I was shy! I was confused, I didn't know how to rely on you, but, I really, really-!"(Velt) At a time like this, what am I saying?

".....It's .....okay Velt .....I.....lo.....ve you."(Aruna)

"MOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOM!!!!"(Velt)

Why was I crying?

"Noisy."(Demi-human)

The demi-human once again prepared to swing his arm. He was going to kill me like my mom.

However,

"LIKE I'LL LET YOUUUU!"(Bonapa)

"Hm?"(Demi-human)

My father tackled the Demi-human from the side and tore him away from me.

He spoke to me while panting,

"Velt, are you hurt?"(Bonapa)

Am I hurt? There was some pain. But I could move a bit. But, my mom was much more injured than I was. When I realized it, I was in a pool of blood, and my mom was no longer moving. At this rate, she was going to die. But my father wasn't saying anything. The only thing he did was bite his lips as his shoulders shook.

"Velt. Papa is going to fight this guy. In the meantime, run to the castle."  
(Bonapa) "N-no, but, mom, at this rate... it's dangerous, I..."(Velt) I couldn't speak right. I couldn't say what I wanted to say. I didn't even understand what I was trying to say.

"All of you will die."(Demi-human)

It was easy to understand as the demi-human stood up. There's no way we can win. We are absolutely going to die.

"No..... We can't run....."(Velt)

That was the only thing I could squeeze out. But, at the moment I said it, my father, for the first time in my life, grabbed me by the collar.

"Didn't you hear me? I told you to hurry up and RUN! You should listen to your parents once in a while, you damned idiot of a son!"(Bonapa) "Ugh!"(Velt)

"GOOOOOOOOO!! RUUUUN!!!"(Bonapa)

When I didn't run, my resolve to die was easily and completely shattered by my dad's words. Even though I was injured, I simply lost myself as I ran.

"No, somebody, help, they're going to be killed. My dad is... My mom is...!"  
(Velt) Somebody help me. They're going to die. Somebody help!

"Velt..... Mama and papa..... will no matter what, and no matter when,

protect you because....."(Bonapa) I could only faintly hear his voice at this point.

"Somebody, SOMEBODY, SOMEBODY COME! COME AND HELP!!"(Velt) I yelled towards the direction I was running.

Somebody, please hear my voice, that's all I want.

Wishing for that, I could see something in the distance. It was an uncountable number of horses.

"Velt-kun!"(????)

It was Guard Captain Galva and the knights. The moment I saw their figures, I felt complete relief, causing me to lose consciousness.

———Of all the things in the world, we love you the most, Velt.

I felt as if I could hear the words of my father, as if they were whispered on the wind.

## Chapter 11: Yet Another Regret

I awoke. By awoke, I meant that I was still alive. But where was this place? As I thought of that, my body was met with a sudden impact.

"Velt! Thank goodness you're okay, Velt!"(Forna) It was Forna. She had jumped at me vigorously as I lay on the bed. Large teardrops flowed down her face, and her body was trembling. It was as if she were confirming my existence, and once she had done so she transmitted her desire to never separate from me.

"Forna, this is...?"(Velt)

"The castle's sickroom. It has been three hours, and if you didn't wake up... I, I..."(Forna) I see, I was saved. At that time, Galva and the others arrived, and then...

"Mom and dad, they...!"(Velt)

My consciousness had completely returned. That's right, that wasn't all just a dream. Were my parents saved? However, before I could figure it out, Forna hung her head down.

"Velt, umm, about mother and father, you see..."(Forna) Don't...

"Oi, what's wrong? Why are you making that face? Mom and dad are here right? They were saved by Galva and the others right?"(Velt) They should have been saved. But why... why was Forna crying...

"Velt-kun, you've finally woken up?"(Galva)

"Galva! Good timing, where are mom and dad?!"(Velt) Galva made his way over with a calm face. However, at the moment I asked, Galva had bit his lips and closed his eyes, shaking his head in regret.

"I'm sorry. We made our way over there as fast as we could but... it was already..."(Galva) "Oi..."(Velt)

"The demi-humans ran away in a panic, but...those two were..."(Galva) "Are mom and dad here? Then let me see them."(Velt) "No, that's, it's better for you

not to see them."(Galva) "It's alright, I'm fine now."(Velt)

"But,"(Galva)

"Please."(Velt)

It's just, I said I wanted to meet them. And he said that it would be better if I didn't look. However, I said I wanted to see them. I was led out of the sickroom and walked about inside the castle, finally arriving at a gloomy room.

"...Dad...Mom..."(Velt)

I told them to leave me alone, but Galva and Forna followed me inside. It wasn't about whether I accepted it or not, but that I wanted to affirm it myself. I looked down at the table, my mother and father lay on sheets, dyed red with their blood.

"I didn't, think about it at all."(Velt)

"Velt?"(Forna)

It's not the attack by the demon. I haven't thought how I should feel now that the situation's come to this.

"Am I not Asakura Ryuuma? And yet, why, this conflict, these feelings..."(Velt) Truthfully, I thought, they were just some other people. In spite of that, why. Why do I feel this way, now that things ended up like this.

'Velt, won't you play with papa today?'(Aruna)

'Velt, do you dislike being held by mama that much?'(Bonapa) Memories of playing with father. Memories of being embraced by mother.

"We were only related by blood... by blood..."(Velt) What is it, this feeling.

"They should have just been normal..."(Velt)

Of course, mom and dad won't be there when I go home. Tomorrow and forever more, no matter how many years pass, I won't be able to meet them ever again. I can't hear their voices any more. Their noisy bantering, their jovial exchanges, me being spoiled.

"What use is it regretting it now!"(Velt)

However, the tears didn't stop.

"Daaaaaaaaaaaaad! Moooooooooooooooooooooom! Waaaaaaaaaaaaaaah!"(Velt)  
That they're strangers only related by blood is a lie. They really are my parents, and are important to me after all.

"I'm going to kill that, that monster! I'll tear it limb from limb and burn it to ashes! No matter how far I have to search, I'm going to slaughter it!"(Velt) As if I could forgive it. Of course not. Not that bastard.

Just wait for me, I'll find you one day and kill you for sure. Even if I die, if it's to...

"Stop thinking of doing something stupid."(???) An unexpected person entered the room where it was only the three of us.

It's sensei.

"Sensei... Why..."(Velt)

"I was asked by the princess. To be here for you. I heard what happened."(Melma) When I saw Forna, she nodded her head slightly. It's none of their business... so I thought. Really, I don't want to see anyone right now, her most of all.

"Sensei, I, I didn't get the chance to introduce you to mom and dad."(Velt)  
"Yeah. I regret not even being able to say hello. How did things manage to end up like this."(Melma) I regret it as well. Why was I so difficult, why did I shy away from them.

"Hey, sensei. They protected me, gave their lives for me."(Velt) "Aah, that is surely their love for you."(Melma) "They knew they would die, but they, even though they should have known."(Velt) "However, you were more important to them than their own lives. That's the kind of existence you were to them."(Melma) "...Asakura Ryuuma's parents... If Ryuuma died, would they have cried?"(Velt) "I don't know. But you know, just remember this, you are Velt Jeeha. Not related to Asakura Ryuuma at all. And the one that loves Velt Jeeha from the bottom of their heart is right beside you. That is the truth, the undeniable reality."(Melma) I know. It's just, I was putting a wall between us.

"Asakura, no, Velt. We've completely forgotten. Even though we've been reborn, it's over if you die."(Melma) Of course. I should have regretted this life



having died before.

"Aah, that's right. That's how it is. It's too late to regret when you're already dead. I should have realized that from Kamino already."(Velt) (TN: Remember Kamino? Refer to chapter 000.) Just how long have I regretted not telling her what I wanted to say?

"I really, wanted to be spoiled more... be together more! I actually loved mom and dad a lot."(Velt) What a fool I've been. Even dying didn't fix me. This time it won't be the same. Instead of dying a second time, mom and dad died in my place. I will never regret things, ever again.

"Forna..."(Velt)

Forna didn't say anything, but I think she really wanted to ask me and sensei something. Probably about who or what 'Asakura Ryuuma' is. But, she never asked about anything. I guessed she hadn't heard about it until now. However, that's just my own childish line of thought.

"Someday... I'll tell you about it someday."(Velt) "Velt?"(Forna)

"Yeah, I'll tell you. That's all I can promise."(Velt) I don't know if I can smile at all, but I've had enough of being a crybaby today. Forna seemed ready to cry again, and it made me want to cry. I can't say any more than this today, though.

"I'm alright, already."(Velt)

I bade farewell to my mother and father, strongly embracing Forna as she sobbed.

## Chapter 12: Today, I Begin

I was... Asakura Ryuuma was helplessly foolish. In the place where the worthless boy died, surely nobody would be sad. However, Velt Jeeha's parents were different. Today, all throughout the country, many a tear were shed at the sad news. The farmers, the commoners, the soldiers, the nobles, and even the king...

"Velt, you know, I'll say it now, but I was your father's rival back in the day. Taira, Bonapa and I were always going at each other as kids when Aruna was around. In the end, having naught but a warm heart, she married Bonapa. When you born from the two, I was happy. Those two were truly irreplaceable existences for me."(Melma)

Forna's father, in other words the king of the country, is neither strong nor especially gifted, unlike his daughter. Even though he's royalty, he carries himself just like a commoner. However, he was congenial to everyone, which was exactly what the people loved about him.

"Velt. There are no more words I can offer. Bonapa and Aruna were my irreplaceable friends."(The King)

It wasn't just how he appeared, the king was truly sad. If his retainer and child were not here, he would probably be crying right now. It wasn't just the king. General Taira appeared mortified when he heard what had happened. It's saddening, but when I think of how precious mom and dad were thought of, it also made me proud.

"Whoever captures the demon that killed those two will receive a proper reward. Rest assured. I will do all I can within my power to help."(Taira)

If it were Asakura Ryuuma, such words would be utterly unthinkable. But, I am not the same as I was. I am thoughtful and considerate now. Words would not come out. All I could do was nod. And that wasn't all.

"Now then, Velt. If you like, would you stay in the castle until things calm down?"(The King)

"Eh, the castle?"(Velt)

"Your home's not in any shape for you to live there. Well, ten years old is too young to be made to live alone. Forna would be delighted as well. You could go back and forth to school."(The King)

Not good. I'm about to cry again. To be frank, I was reborn as a commoner with no special talents or ability to use magic, which I thought was unlucky. However, I'm actually blessed. Until I met sensei, I thought I alone was different. But I, Velt Jeeha has people that love him this much.

"Velt, you should. It is certainly much better than being alone."(Forna)

Forna grabbed both my hands and nodded. That's right, hearing those words might make me happy more than anything else.

However, I'm not the type to depend on others' kindness. There's no real reason to, and for the normal me, I want to wait until things settle down. At the castle, I may be happy, but I won't be able to relax.

"No way. It's suffocating there."(Velt)

"Hm, I thought you would say that, being you. However, I cannot allow you to remain alone. As king, as an adult, and as your father's good friend."(The King)

Even though he says that, I was alone most of the time in the other world and there's no reason to worry, but I can't really say that can I.

"Ah, in other words, rather than alone... Would it be fine, to have someone watch over me?"(Velt)

"W, well, if someone were willing to take care of you..."(The King)

Someone to watch over me... There's only one person that I can think of.

"Sensei."(Velt)

"What?"(Melma)

Sensei was standing quietly behind us during our exchange, becoming mildly panicked when the conversation suddenly came to a halt. Although he's only going to panic more from here on...

"I'll help out at the shop when I've got time... So can I live there?"(Velt)

"Ha?"(Melma)

"I want you to take me in, if possible..."(Velt)

"Whaaaaaaaaaaaaaat?"(Melma)

See, he panicked. Well, not only is sensei surprised, but everyone else here is. It's a hard sell, becoming an adopted child, as it's normally unthinkable.

"Velt, what are you thinking of, troubling that man like that! Did father not tell you to live in the castle!?"(Forna)

"No, it's not that troubling."(Velt)

"Wait, are you not thinking about the trouble you're causing me?"(Melma)

"Because I'll help out with the shop. Couldn't you use an extra set of hands now that it's doing well? Aren't I the next person in the country after sensei that knows about ramen?"(Velt)

To be sure, I know I'm saying something absurd. There's nobody who'd want a conceited child like me. But, it's also true that I have been relying on sensei for various things.

"Asaku... No, Velt. You, do you know what you're saying? You're saying you want me to take in someone else's child? Even though I don't have children, I am married, do you think God would permit it?"(Melma)

"Yeah, I know. But, whenever something's seriously troubling me I can talk to you, and you help me out don't you?"(Velt)

As I said so, Fornia furrowed her brows and hit the back of my head.

"Stupid Velt! Why, why! Talk to me if you have any problems! Why won't you talk to me? Didn't you two only meet the other day?"(Forna)

"There are things guys can't talk to girls about."(Velt)

"W, what did you say?"(Forna)

"For example, how to confess to the girl I like, how could I ask you something like that?"(Velt)

"Ah... Y, you, Velt! You don't need to talk to somebody, if you just tell them you like them, it's plenty."(Forna)

It wasn't exactly a lie. Somehow, her face became beet red and she had a bashful, happy expression. She came to some misunderstanding, but I didn't say anything untrue.

"Sheesh, relying on me now isn't fair you know? He was, I was a teacher in the past you know."(Melma)

Sensei looked skyward, amazed. However, he seemed to have given up at some point.

"Listen, there are several conditions. To begin with, no lying to me. Same with secrets. You'll tell me things in detail. We'll have a discussion. If you can't do that, I'll throw you out."(Melma)

I am unbelievably lucky. Even if there are others that were reborn like us, I've got the best circumstances.

"After that, do care about the past, but don't be fixated on it. What's important to Velt Jeeha is more important."(Melma)

"Yeah, I'll try."(Velt)

"Lastly, I will call you Velt from now on. Got it?"(Melma)

Probably nobody else understands the meaning of the conversation. Though, that this conversation even happened is my good fortune. Sensei said to not focus on being Asakura Ryuuma from here on, but to live as Velt Jeeha. Also, he won't call me Asakura. He will see me as Velt. Sensei is telling is me to live this way now.

In a sense, the life of Velt Jeeha may have just begun, today.

## Chapter 13: School... Beginning And End

I didn't think I was this weak. So, I thought I simply needed to become strong. It's just, there are no standards for measuring combat strength. Though I say that, for the talent-less me who is unable to use magic, I don't feel like I'll get stronger by just haphazardly doing whatever I can. I already proved that over the last ten years. What was it that I needed? If I can't obtain it, it will become my third regret.

"Nuoooooooooh!"(Velt)

"You did it, it moved, Velt-kun! You finally moved the jar!"(Teacher)

On the platform where the attention of the class was gathered, just being able to do what everyone else could already do was met with applause. However, being this disgraceful was fine. The other kids my age have already moved countless steps ahead of me.

"Now then, everyone in the class has passed... Well, Velt-kun has various things to learn about the foundation of magic still, but everyone should work hard from today forth to learn magic that suits them."(Teacher)

While the majority of the class had delighted expressions, I alone was dejected. To be honest, this levitation magic is my limit. Any more than this is too hard.

"Now then, to review, can someone tell me the eight types of elemental magic in the world?"(Teacher)

To answer the teacher's gentle question, the most of the class vigorously raised their hands. The answer is obvious even for children. Shalt was chosen, and responded full of confidence.

"There are eight types. Fire, earth, lightning, wind, water, darkness, light, and void."(Shalt)

"Yes, that is correct. Aside from levitation magic, which is a bit of an exception, a person will generally have an affinity with one type of magic. When you have determined your magical affinity, you have set foot on the path of

magic."(Teacher)

(TN: We think void magic is something along the lines of not having an element. Will have to see how this changes, if at all.)

In this world, there is technical magic and elemental magic. Technical magic is like the levitation magic I struggled with, including things like telepathy and binding magic, and there are over one hundred different ones. However, alongside technical magic exists elemental magic. Put simply, things like fire and lightning and wind magic can be created and manipulated, and be used to attack. It's the standard for wizards. How well you can utilize elemental magic determines your value as a wizard, so it makes everyone excited.

"Shalt-kun, you already know what element you have an affinity for, and you can use some elemental magic, yes?"(Teacher)

"Yes, of course."(Shalt)

"Then, would you like to try practicing? Do the best you can."(Teacher)

Shalt moved to the front and raised his hand. At that moment, a gentle breeze began to flow inside the closed room.

"**Wind.**"(Shalt)

It was weak. Well, it's supposed to be controlled anyways. It was weak enough to only cause his hair to sway. However, that is Shalt's element.

"Shalt-kun has wind. He can combine it with water magic to produce ice magic. Everyone, please try each of the different elements and put them together to make magic this month."(Teacher)

Impossible. It's not a complaint, but I have no idea how. By the way, Shalt could blow away a full grown man if he was serious, while I'm only at the level of moving a jar right now. In all seriousness, the differentiation between wizards is their use of elemental magic. There's the magic soldier type that uses a combination of magic with a weapon to fight. Those that can use both elemental and technical magic are the wizard type. They don't have any problems at all. The genius types that can master both blade and magic are what they call heroes and heroines. Aside from those are the useless people that can't use magic that must find different jobs. That's the type I probably am.

In other words, elemental magic determines if you're a plebeian or a hero.

"Incidentally, the famous young hero can use all of the elements. By chance, you may be able to become a hero or heroine as well, so please try hard."

(Teacher)

What kind of freaking cheat is that.

Just so you know, my element is earth. There's something to be said for being the son of a farmer, and I'm a bit disappointed it's not at the level of some kind of cheat.

"Earth, is it... Anyways, fire and lightning are cooler and seem stronger, so it would be good to have those."(Velt)

Muttering to myself about my boring element, the teacher came over while laughing with a smile, riding upon the earth.

"Oh? Humans are an existence born from the earth you know? Earth magic is an expression of humanity itself, an exceedingly beautiful element, no?"

(Teacher)

Though the teacher said so gently, she probably has compliments for all of the elements. Because you can't choose your element, there have to be others who are disappointed as well.

"Crap, I wanted to get void. It's cool and seems the strongest."(Student A)

"What're you saying, isn't fire magic cooler and more manly?"(Student B)

"But, with void you can make cool things like gravity magic you know? I would be happy about that."(Student A)

Ooh, chuunibyou is it? Ah, they're ten years old. Heck, they're at the same level as me. Well, void and darkness and light seem to be rare elements, but somehow or another there doesn't appear to be anyone in my class with those.

Wait, wasn't Forna a genius that can use lightning, light, and void magic?

"Ahaha, stuuupid. Even if you had void, you wouldn't be able to use gravity magic. That's one of the hardest magic to use you know?"(Student B)

"S, shut up, I wanted it a little bit. A long time ago, the old man at the second-



hand magic shop beat up demons with gravity magic, it was super cool."

(Student A)

What? That old man was that amazing? Can't judge a person by appearance. However, I'm honestly surprised. Gravity magic literally makes something heavier, though I don't know how much. Ten times, one hundred times, a thousand times heavier, it's a cheat magic that breaks the rules, and is completely unrelated to me. But, even though it may be unrelated to me, it might be the magic I need the most, in a sense.

"That's right. Possibly, at that time, if the baton had more power..."(Velt)

More destructive power would come from speed, power, and weight. Though, it's not worth much with the body of a ten-year-old. Training would give me power and speed, but nothing can be done about the weight.

"Ha, pointless. I'm an idiot. I finally made something float..."(Velt)

Right now, what I said, made me think of a foolish question.

"Hey, I've got a question."(Velt)

"Eh? Velt-kun has a question! ...\*sniff\*, Aruna, your son has become so splendid."(Teacher)

"No, that's not something to cry about. Instead of that, it's a dumb question, but what's the difference between levitation magic and gravity magic?"(Velt)

"...Ha?"(Teacher)

"Well, gravity magic, makes things heavier right? Doesn't levitation magic make things lighter? Though the effect is the opposite, don't they both change the weight?"(Velt)

The teacher, and the rest of the class were dumbfounded. Then, voices began to leak out one by one, resulting in laughter from all.

"Ahahahahaha, Velt, what are you saying?"(Student C)

"Hi~, A~, It hurts, what are you saying with a straight face?"(Student D)

"Velt-kun is bad in the head. Forna-chan, your future doesn't look good."  
(Student E)

What? Was my question really that dumb? The teacher was trying to hide her face while laughing right along. I suddenly feel disgraced now.

"*Fufufu*, sorry, Velt-kun. To answer your question, they're a bit different."  
(Teacher)

"Wh, wa, eh?"(Velt)

"Levitation magic only makes something float, not make it lighter."(Teacher)

"But, but it floated! That, isn't it because it got lighter?"(Velt)

"Not quite. First, gravity magic makes something heavier. For example, if I made this textbook one hundred times heavier and hit you with it, you would feel one hundred times the power. But if I used levitation magic to make the book float and then 'grabbed' it to hit you, it would be just with the weight of the book. The phenomenon of 'levitation' occurs, so teacher's book doesn't actually change weight. That's how it is."(Teacher)

Hearing the teacher's explanation, I, even to this day, don't know why it was that unusual. It's like that, right? But why don't I think that way even after that explanation? You all, what are you thinking? Am I the weird one here? Is it because I'm the only one that grew up in a world where levitation is a downright lie, where magic is nothing but a trick? Levitation magic is amazing! Wait, why am I only thinking at the level of making something float? This, I can use this. No, most of my worries might have just gone away.

"Teacher~"(Velt)

"What is it? Velt-kun."(Teacher)

"I... I'm super motivated now. I'll try hard."(Velt)

"Velt-kun! That's it, that interest! Ah~ Velt-kun finally understands what I've been teaching him."(Teacher)

Right, I'm motivated.

Thinking that, I decided to leave school.

I wrote a few words that I was dropping out, delivered it to the school, and left. The next day, even as the teacher cried and Forna stormed into the ramen shop shouting, my decision did not change.

## Chapter 14: Full Of Resolution

They day after I dropped out of school, teacher came to the counter at the shop, sat down, and started crying.

"Waaaaaaaah, why, why did you leave, Velt-kun!"(Teacher)

"Like—I—said, I realized what it is that I really can do."(Velt)

"Even so, don't go deciding on your own to leave without even talking to anyone! Now, I won't be able to face Aruna in heaven like this~"(Teacher)

"It's fine. I've been telling mom how you've been taking care of me in various ways."(Velt)

It's not like I up and quit. I properly turned in the withdraw form, and asked the king for a word since he helped me enter the school. He seemed busy, so we couldn't meet, and I wasn't able to obtain approval.

"Veeeeeeeeellllllllttttttt!"(Forna)

The angry roar I'm used to hearing. Well, I thought she would come.

"What are you thinking! Dropping out of school as you please, how big of an idiot are you? You haven't even graduated grade school, what do you plan to do in the future?"(Forna)

It's Forna. Somehow, she's been talking like my mother lately about my future, and frankly what I want to do hasn't changed.

"Forna. The thing is, I didn't quit without thinking about anything. I quit after I thought about the future."(Velt)

"What are you saying? You who can't even use basic magic, what kind of future are you thinking of? You can only sit on a chair in a kitchen!"(Forna)

Sitting on a chair across the counter, Forna stopped shouting at me for a moment. However, she doesn't know yet.

"What are you saying, Forna. I'm working aren't I?"(Velt)

"Ha?"(Forna)

As proof, the glass and plate that the customer had finished with floated back to kitchen.

"This is..."(Forna)

"What do you think, it's levitation. Last night, I broke a plate and sensei got angry, but I've improved this much now you see?"(Velt) (TN: Sensei = Melma, Teacher = from school)

I puffed out my chest, full of confidence. That's right, I've finally learned how to use levitation magic this much.

So, now what? Trembling Forna...

"YOU BIG DUMMMMMMMMMMMMMMY!"(Forna)

...went berserk.

"Carrying it by hand is plenty efficient, why are you wasting magic on it? Speaking of which, quitting school after only learning levitation magic, what are you thinking!"(Forna)

"What are you talking about. I wasn't able to make anything levitate a bit before right? Now I can make things move."(Velt)

"That's something that anyone in this world can do! It's only good if you hurt your hand and have to move something heavy yourself!"(Forna)

Yep, she's mad. I thought I had improved plenty, but there seems to be a long way to go.

"Hey, Velt-kun. Are you planning on working at this shop from now on? Aren't there other things you can still learn at school before you quit? Techniques useful for cooking, there are many things still you know?"(Teacher)

"Certainly. Though sensei is a chef, he has various useful abilities."(Velt)

"That's right~ And yet, what are you planning on doing quitting school this early? If you've decided what you want to do in the future, you can learn magic that's useful for that at school you know?"(Teacher)

That might be so. You would think that, normally. But, my thinking is exactly the opposite.

"That's not it. I quit school so I don't learn any more magic. In other words, I'm retreating."(Velt)

"E, eh?? Wh, you, are you planning on living by only using levitation magic?"  
(Teacher)

"You, stop being irresponsible, Velt! This is the limit of my tolerance you know?"(Forna)

Not good. Forna looks like she's about to become violent and hit me at any second. Well, from the start, I was satisfied just learning math so I was fine quitting. However, it's not like I just quit on a whim.

"Forna. We might not think or understand the same way, but I'm thinking in my own way."(Velt)

"What's that, suddenly having a serious face."(Forna)

"Even about mom and dad, it's not like I haven't been thinking. Quitting school, people may think I'm just a fool, but I think I want to be different. Results might come faster that way, but on just this, I want you to trust in and watch over me."(Velt)

"..."(Forna, Teacher)

Lately, I've realized that, while Forna has her annoying moments, she's truly been thinking about me even though she's only ten years old. Therefore, if my earnestness is truly transmitted, she'll believe in me.

"Hmm~~~~~ Don't come crying to me later."(Forna)

She really will become a good woman in the future. A splendid princess, too. I think I'll be tossed aside when the day comes.

"*Sniff*, I understand. It's hard for sensei, but I'll watch over you for a while. But, if you have anything you want to talk about do come talk to me? Ok?"  
(Teacher)

"Yeah, got it, sensei."(Velt)

I can't afford to betray the expectation of those two who were so worried about me. However, ever since that incident happened, I might have actually changed. As Asakura Ryuuma, during sports and culture festivals and such,

starting with Kamino, my overly familiar classmates pushed me to participate. It was troublesome, but I didn't hate it. I didn't want to betray their trust. Those feelings faded when I was born as Velt Jeeha, and contrary to my current situation, those feelings were forgotten. I feel like I've finally been able to remember those feelings.

"All that yelling has made me hungry. Give it to me thick."(Forna)

"Hah? I put out front that we're on break right now didn't I? Sensei isn't here either."(Velt)

"Though I can see something was made over there."(Forna)

"That's my practice. I can't let you eat it."(Velt)

Forna pointed at a small pot hidden in the kitchen where I was putting together soup. Teacher was surprised as well.

"No way, Velt-kun cooks?"(Teacher)

"The thing is, sensei had a condition. If I were to quit school, I need to be able to cook, not just do odd jobs in the kitchen. This is proof of my resolution, so to speak."(Velt)

"Like—I—said, why didn't you consult me as a teacher! *Mou*, I'm mad. Give me that!"(Teacher)

"Like—I—said, I said it before. That's proof of my resolution. It's a substitute for my resolution, so can't eat it. That's not something I can give to you or Forna to eat."(Velt)

"Just, let me have it! I am not teacher right now, I'm a customer! Your customer is hungry! Now, give it here!"(Teacher)

"*Guh*, what a demanding customer. I got it, if you want it that much then eat up! Be moved by my conviction!"(Velt)

Putting in my all, I boiled and drained the noodles. I then stirred up the pure white tonkotsu soup, and combined the two. To be clear, I haven't cooked since my days as Asakura Ryuuma, and this was more real than magic. This is the first time in my life that I've given something I was proud of making to someone else.

"Speaking of which, this is my first time eating something made by Velt."  
(Forna)

"That's right. Let's see what he's got."(Teacher)

Forna with chopsticks, and teacher with a fork, they tried the ramen I made.  
And, what happened next was,

"*Bleeehhhhhh*."(Teacher)

"H, horrrrrrrrrible!"(Forna)

They threw up.

"What, what's with that disgusted reaction! That's my best dish!"(Velt)

"Your sloppy cooking is what's disgusting! The stock and ingredients don't go together at all, and the ingredients have been boiled too much!"(Forna)

"To begin with, Velt-kun, did you taste it?"(Teacher)

"What?"(Velt)

I took a spoon and tried the soup.

"*Ur*, it really is bad. I really shouldn't have let you try it."(Velt)

"Velt, if you're trying to make poison, I won't forgive you."(Forna)

"...Speaking of which, Velt-kun's resolution... can't be trusted..."(Teacher)

My resolution is firm, but the road ahead is long.

## Chapter 15: I Don't Hate The Current Me

Before I realized it, I was constantly being covered in oil and fire.

"Here ya' go! Fried rice is ready! Gyoza in a second!"(Velt) "Velt-kun, water please!"(Customer A)

"Sure thing!"(Velt)

"Velt~ Is my ramen ready?"(Customer B)

"It'll be ready in a sec'!"(Velt)

"Velt boy, hurry up and bring the order! Lunch break is going to end!"  
(Customer C) "I said it's coming, 'ya oaf!"(Velt)

Give me a break, so noisy. Everyone is saying Velt this and Velt that, I'm not the bell you ring! Rather, this place is doing too well. In any case, sensei's cooking is tasty. However, there are empty dishes moving about near the ceiling, as my levitation magic has advanced considerably. Because it's my own special training, I can't complain about it At first I wanted to tell sensei to not spoil me, but I'm glad I didn't. In this world without labor laws, even children are worked to the bone.

(TN: Many places in Japan have a way for you to call someone to your table, either with a bell or a button or something similar.) "Velt-kun. You don't have to help any more after this. Children will be coming to help out."(???) However, there's only one person that spoils me at the shop. That would be her.

"Kami-san, yo."(Velt)

"*Mou*, please stop it with Kami-san already."(??? → Laraana) (TN: Kami-san is one way to refer to someone's wife.) Coming off of break and putting on an apron, was sensei's wife'in this world.'Her name is Laraana. Her hair is only down to her shoulders, but one or both of her eyes are often hidden by her bangs. She looks like the plain and docile type, the one that reads a book in the corner of the classroom.

But, the other day, I happened to see it. With her bangs out of the way, she's very pretty. Her age is unexpectedly high at twenty eight, but she appears to



only be in her teens. Unfortunately, I realized it. Sensei is thirty two but married at nineteen, and has been married for thirteen years. In other words, Laraana-san married sensei when she was fifteen. Though it seems you can get married at fifteen in this world, the problem wasn't that. It was that the formerly fifty-year-old high school teacher went and married a third year middle school kid. I was hit hard when I asked sensei, "Isn't it a crime?"

"*Fuu~ Tired~* I feel like I've suddenly run out of magic power."(Velt) Since mom and dad passed away, I'm staying at sensei's house. After I stopped going to school, I've been helping out with the shop and learning how to make ramen, so I'm normally busy.

"Velt-kun, is now a good time?"(Laraana)

"Hm? What's up, Kami-san."(Velt)

"Yes, your salary. Thank you for working here as always."(Laraana) "O, oh... Wait, what? This, this is quite a lot isn't it? Did you not pull out my room and board?"(Velt) "Hey now! Children shouldn't be worrying about that. Velt-kun isn't a freeloader, but my child, so there's no problem."(Laraana) "No, but... Well... thanks."(Velt)

"*Fufufu*, that's good! You've done enough for today, so why don't you go buy something to give to the princess?"(Laraana) "The princess who can get whatever in the world she wants?"(Velt) "It's the thought that counts!"(Laraana)

Ever since I talked about being a freeloader, Kami-san has welcomed me normally. Well, they don't have a child, so I'm something like their child now. I'm still conscious of being polite to everyone I meet. Furthermore, I'm still somewhat embarrassed from being regularly spoiled by Kami-san, but I think she and sensei really are happy.

"Forna, huh... What should I get?"(Velt)

Later, though this is somewhat unrelated, I discovered something. At first I originally offered to work at the ramen shop to improve myself, but I'm filled with a sense of fulfillment now to be honest. I never even worked part-time as Asakura Ryuuma, but I don't dislike having worked by the sweat of my brow now.

If I had happened to work hard at farming, I might have come to like it just as much. Just maybe, mom and dad would have been overjoyed. As I thought of that, I still had my regrets as expected, so I've decided not to dwell on it any more. From now on, I don't want to have regrets like that again.

"Velt, you're done with work already?"(Forna)

Forna already knows the timing of my shift perfectly as she suddenly showed herself. Though I thought she was just a noisy brat before, I've begun to think differently as of late. Of course, she's not an object of romantic interest, but something like noticing the younger sister is a brocon. (TN: Brother complex, look it up if you're unsure of the meaning.) "Ah, good timing."(Velt)

"That's right. You're not causing trouble are you?"(Forna) "Are you my mother?"(Velt)

"Of course I'm worried. Ever since that horrible food that you said was your resolution."(Forna) "Well, that was, I was still training."(Velt)

It's the opposite of nagging and talking about love. She's worried about how I'm doing, so she came to see me after all.

"Here, let's go."(Velt)

"Wa, wait I said! Where are we going?"(Forna)

"Around the town."(Velt)

"What? Around the town, what does that mean?"(Forna) "Nothing really. Just that I'm taking you on a date."(Velt) Well, with money in hand, I could treat her a... wait, wait. Why is she trembling there in shock and awe.

"Ve,... Velt... Velt invited me on a date!"(Forna)

"If you don't want to..."(Velt)

"Eh, no, ah, I don't mean that I hate it, let's go! Yes, yes, let us go!"(Forna) I see. When she's not setting the pace, she's normally cute. It's just, I wish she would stop dragging me along and clinging to me. Especially since she's beet red in the face from her embarrassment and skinship.

"Velt... What's happened to you lately? You were a little mature before, but now you're more honest."(Forna) "You think so? Then, doesn't that mean I've

grown up a bit as well?"(Velt) "~~~~~...\*Ufufu, ufufufufufufufufu.\*"(Forna)

"What?"(Velt)

"♪"(Forna)

For some reason Forna became really happy. She began to swing my hand back and forth, all while humming a tune. As we walked around the capital with our usual banter, though the atmosphere was just alright, worrying seemed to be a pointless endeavor while I walked about with my intimate sister.

"Oh, Velt, are you on a date with your wife since your shift's done?"(Person A)  
"Not just today, it's only the usual~"(Velt)

"Next, get better at making ramen you hear?"(Person B) Before, I thought that the bustle of the city was irritating to hear, but somehow I feel that it's alright now. Also, though it's only the usual banter, when mom and pop died, many people visited their graves and cried. Though everyone pokes at me and jokes around, in actuality they're worried about me. Having come to understand that, I've been smiling a lot more whenever I run into them now.

"*Mou*, Velt is popular now."(Forna)

"Ha? I'm not really popular. They're just interested in the neighborhood brat."  
(Velt) "That's not it, Velt is popular! Don't forget, I am the most popular one, more than Velt!"(Forna) "...You, you're smart but, aren't you a bit dumb sometimes?"(Velt) "Saying that with a straight face is rude! *Mou*, now I'm mad, it won't do unless you have a present to give me!"(Forna) "A present? Well, I just happened to get paid, so as long as it's not too expensive..."(Velt) "Velt has present! Wait, you, are you really my Velt? This isn't some transformed monster from the forest, and it's not a dream I'm having is it!?"(Forna) "...You don't want one?"(Velt)

"I, I want it! Want! Need! I, I'll, I'll take it! Umm, what should...Maybe...Ah!"  
(Forna) "Something like a wedding ring is denied."(Velt)

"Eh... Wh, why?"(Forna)

"...Ha...."(Velt)

"Wh, what's with that astonished face! You're too cheeky for just being Velt!

But, wait a bit please. Hm, umm, at the accessory shop, ah, but something that matches... Umm..."(Forna) Are we a comedy duo? What a terrible act. I think it's a bit fun though. Forna wandered back and forth in front of the booth at wit's end. The people in the area were laughing quietly and smiling.

"Sheesh, here, it's not that expensive, so, how about this ribbon?"(Velt) "A ribbon! Umm, umm, ummmmmmmmmmm..."(Forna)

"Hey, don't think so hard. If something caught your interest, say it."(Velt) "Be silent! I'm thinking seriously here, be quiet!"(Forna) "O, oh."(Velt)

It's weird. Just yesterday I was stuck between being Asakura Ryuuma and Velt Jeeha, with no interest in the world nor reason to live. However, with just a small change in thought, all the small, pointless things began to plenty my heart.

If I think about it, living as Asakura Ryuuma during high school might have felt like this. The days where all I did was fight were empty. I thought those who enjoyed school and school life were fools, and I was uninterested.

However, my way of thinking suddenly changed one day. The way I felt about school life reversed completely.

"*Mmm*, how troubling. Pink and white... Which one..."(Forna) That's right, when I came to think that school life was fun, it felt just like this. The change in Velt Jeeha's way of thinking is thanks to sensei, mom and dad, and this precocious brat. And, Asakura Ryuuma's change was thanks to...

——Isn't it fun, Asakura-kun!

"Kamino... Right now, I'm having fun you know? How are you doing...?"(Velt) Someday, I'll show you the me of today, and thank you for helping the me of yesterday.

That feeling, has become even stronger.

## Chapter 16: Big Brother

"Velt, what happened? You're staring off into the distance."(Forna)

"Nothing really. Just, giving my thanks to someone, somewhere far away."  
(Velt)

"What does that mean?"(Forna)

"Not much. Here, I bought the ribbon, let's go."(Velt)

"Ah, w, wait a minute! After this we, we usually have tea and cake somewhere, ah, hey wait a minute!"(Forna)

I did a little too much service. Even though she's a child, being spoiled too much isn't good, so this should be enough for today. Time to go home now, and practice making ramen and...

"Bastard, you trying to start a fight!?"(???)

I heard an angry voice. It's sensei's. However it happened, we heard sensei shout angrily for once, so we naturally quickened our pace. I understood when a crowd had appeared in front of the shop. Wondering what in the world was going on, I pushed my way through the crowd, only to see a single person seated at the counter.

"I'll say it as many times as I have to. This disgusting enthusiasm, sickening smell, and what's more this small, shitty excuse for a store!"(???)

"Woah there, sorry if I *offended* you, but that's just how this shop is."(Melma)

Sensei was in an argument with a mysterious man. He wore a purple mantle, decorated with the emblem of the Elfashia kingdom. The somewhat small man had long orange hair was tied back. What stood out, though, was the spear leaning against the counter, decorated with skull markings.

Laraana seemed to be shaken and was crying. What is she doing even though she's an adult, I thought, but I'll forgive her because she looks cute. The problem is the foulmouthed mystery man.

"Hm? Hey, Forna I, I think I remember that guy."(Velt)

"What a coincidence, Velt. I seem to remember that man as well."(Forna)

With complicated and disturbed feelings, we watched as sensei and the mystery man continued their "conversation."

"More than that, I can't let you off on these shitty things you call chopsticks. What's with them? You can't even eat this crappy looking stuff with a fork. The thing I can handle the least is the taste. Even though it's horrible, why does it taste so good?"(???)

"Haa? Kid, what's with you coming into this restaurant here spewing shit this and crap that?! And more than that it's horribly good you say? Why don't you tell me what about my ramen is it that you're saying is disgustingly... good? What?"(Melma)

"Are you kidding me? Garlic? There's no way it wouldn't be crap be putting in soup, so why is it so good?! It's addictive!"(???)

"O, oh."(Melma)

Ah, we know this troublesome man that's stupid in the head.

"Brother Farga!"(Forna)

"Farga!"(Velt)

At our words, the man turned to look. With a glare as sharp as a dagger, he was the man we thought he was.

"Yo. Dumb sis. Stupid bro It's been two years?"(???àFarga)

That man is not only Forna's brother and two years older, but has been away from the country despite being the prince.

"Wh, What? Hah? The princess' brother? Eh?"(Melma)

Having learned that the man is Forna's brother, sensei turned pale. Well, it's only natural. After all, who would think that this repulsive man was actually a prince?

"Elder brother. It, it has been a long time. Ever since you joined the adventurer's guild and left the country after becoming a hunter, I have not heard from you. What have you been doing?"(Forna)

"Well I mean I got away from home after fighting with the king and queen, but I somehow ended up coming back!"(Farga)

It's been two years. In spite of that, the sharp and condescending glare in his eyes was still going strong. That exchange of words with sensei earlier was just the same as always.

"Hmph, so little sis'. How many kids have you had since I left?"(Farga)

"What?"(Forna)

.....?

"Tch, you look like you're married like that. Dumb bro. I told you make her pregnant when I was gone didn't I? Did you forget I was going to make myself king when I came back? Goddamn couple."(Farga)

Yep. His train wreck of a mindset is still going strong. If I remember correctly, he was fifteen years old two years ago, so he's seventeen now right? The same age as Asakura Ryuuma was. If he went to school, he absolutely wouldn't make any friends at all.

Wait, why do I even care?

"Screw you man! Thinking about how we met back then, you said some really crazy shit! Use your common sense, idiot!"(Velt)

"Haa? You worthless dumbass who can't even get it up, it's cause of your stupid dick and it's weakass white stuff."(Farga)

"I'm ten years old, there's no way we'd be doing it! Care about your sister's chastity a bit more!"(Velt)

"Chastity? This damn kid. Not only no kid, you haven't even had sex yet?"(Farga)

"Of course we haven't! Aah, I can't take it anymore, talking with this guy is disgusting."(Velt)

He is Forna's real brother, Farga Elfashia, heir to the throne. However, there were some family circumstances and he fought with his parents and ran away, just another delinquent you can find anywhere. There were rumors going around about how he joined the adventurer's guild that exists all throughout

the continent, like how he defeated demonic beasts, subdued groups of thieves, and even managed to take down a giant dragon.

"Brother, please don't speak so improperly in public!"(Forna)

Yes, that's it, tell it to him straight, little sister.

"Velt and I have our own order to things. At the very least, please wait until we are twelve years old to expect children!"(Forna)

"Don't go saying something that'll make me feel bad! Brother and sister both, don't make your stupidity level go up!"(Velt)

I can't take it anymore. That's right, when these two are together, it always gets worse. I've been responding to their idiocy all along, but ever since my memories as Asakura Ryuuma returned, something has felt more uncomfortable. Right as I was deciding to change, someone troublesome came back.

"So, you, why'd you suddenly come back? Make peace with the king? The queen's not here though. Been away on an expedition for a while."(???)

"Peace? 'Course not. If I'm here, the big man will just chase me away."(Farga)

"The big man, huh? Hey hey, you're rumored to be the strongest hunter in all of humanity, what could you be scared of."(???)

My interest was piqued, and as I passed by Farga...

"The damn hero and the allied forces that were fighting Shakryu of the seven demon lords came back to the country."(Farga)

.....What?

"Wh, whaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaat?"(????)

"B, brother, is that true? Then in the meantime, Shakryu destroyed the kingdom of Bolbardie..."(Forna)

"Yeah, After that, the damn hero and allied forces went to fight. They couldn't kill the demon lord, chasing it all over."(Farga)

The demon army, is coming to this country? Why? What is the hero doing  
Wait, really?



Woah, just like I thought, those words started to cause a panic in the onlookers.

"The guard at the border's been strengthened. This time it's General Taira's damn turn."(Farga)

For a while now, my heart that was supposed to be calm and at peace, has become uneasy. I've always felt indifferent to war, but is one going to start nearby?

"Are those weird-looking bastards.....Coming? Are they... to this country..."(Velt)

"Velt..."(Forna)

"Tch. This dumb bro."(Farga)

I suddenly recalled my mom and dad, and tightly clenched my fists. And then, Farga sent a high kick, right to my head.

"Ow, wh-what the hell are you doing!?"(Velt)

"Little bro. You don't need to overthink things. With the defenses at the border of this country, there's no way that some shitty monster'll make it to the capital."(Farga)

"Wha?"(Velt)

"Besides, I'm here now. I won't..... I won't let something like that happen again. Whether or not it's a demon, the demon king himself or..... even demi-humans."(Farga)

I involuntarily clicked my tongue. Farga's expression didn't change, but he tightly gripped the fork he was holding.

"Farga, did you hear? About my mom and dad?"(Velt)

"I heard about what happened earlier. It was a pretty shitty surprise. Especially since those two took good care of me when I was young..."(Farga)

Feeling somewhat angered, I found Farga's words reliable...

"As long as I'm in this country I won't let those shitty bastards do something like that ever again... That's why I won't let you lose your family again, mark my

words."(Farga)

As ever, he was someone with a terrible tongue and way of thinking, but in reality he had always been a really good guy, and because of that, I'm glad.

"O-oi, Velt, is this guy really the prince? Or rather, is he actually a good guy?"  
(Melma)

"He really is the prince, and he really is someone good. Well, his tongue and the look in his eyes might make him seem like a mess, but he's tolerable."(Velt)

It was more or less the truth. As a friend of my family, I felt that he was trustworthy. I don't want to turn him into an enemy, though.

But at that time, including me, nobody could have anticipated what was coming.

I was told that I absolutely did not have to do anything, even though the demon lord was coming, but exactly because it was the demon lord, I went all-out.

## Chapter 17: Intolerance

Forna came back, and though rumors of the demon lord coming spread throughout the country, nothing seems to have changed. If the demon lord were to come, the army would prepare a defense far from the capital. There should have been some reports from the area near the border, but no information has come yet. There's nothing worse than having needless anxiety or false information. Rather than live in fear of when the demon lord may come, living life to the fullest until that moment is better. And so, today is no different than normal, I am once again covered in oil and fire.

"What, delivery?"(Velt)

"That's right. It's near where you used to live, Motaro's house."(Melma)

"Hey hey, ain't that outside the capital? The noodles are going to swell, yeah?"(Velt)

"Right. Now that you say that, fried rice, soup, and gyoza will do."(Melma)

"Jeez, we're so darn busy and now we have this delivery system on top of it."(Velt)

"Well, I did get laborers for cheap. Get moving."(Melma)

"Yeah, yeah. This is training too."(Velt)

I've been living in sensei's house for a few weeks. The shop has become wildly popular in the capital, and it's always crowded at lunch and dinner now. It's smooth sailing though, with more helping hands and experienced cooks in the kitchen. In a way, sensei has used his memories from his previous life and been successful. If I had to say something, it would be that I'm only washing dishes and running odd jobs in order to better myself in ways other than fighting, and today another task was added at last. That would be the new delivery system.

"Flotation (levitation)."(Velt)

I learned to make wooden travel containers by watching and imitating others. Since I never carried anything around as Asakura Ryuuma, it's somewhat refreshing, but it's also pretty heavy. However, flotation (levitation) magic is

quite helpful for transporting heavy things, so I've gotten more skilled from the countless repetitions. It's the perfect practice for me.

"Hold on, sensei, you didn't happen to overhear my plan and start the delivery service for me did you... there's no way, right?"(Velt)

As promised, I only spoke to sensei. When I quit school, I had a plan for what I would do afterwards. Search for Kamino. I won't regret a third time. What is necessary for that is strength. That means techniques to fight and survive. First off, the most important one is the strength to fight. I've spoken to sensei about my process, was he taking things into consideration for me as well? No, let's put that aside because he'll dodge the question even if I ask. It's just, I'm only doing what I need to do.

"Hey, kid."(???)

"Oh, old man from the weapon shop!"(Velt)

"Errands?"(???àWeapon Shop Man)

"Something like that."(Velt)

By chance, I ran into the old man from the weapon shop. Since the battle with Shalt, I've seen him every now and then. I'm done with school and practicing magic, so now all that's left are the weapons. I talk to him sometimes if I want advice concerning weapons.

"How's it been, since I remodeled them?"(Weapon Shop Man)

"Aah. Well, it'll be fine. I haven't been able to use them, so I don't know how good they are."(Velt)

"Hmph. Drop by if something comes up."(Weapon Shop Man)

"Sure. I'll come by the shop. I'll bring something next time."(Velt)

"Boy, don't start talking like an old man."(Weapon Shop Man)

When we first met, the old man at the weapon shop said I didn't have the conviction nor preparation to hold a weapon. However, I quit school, sought instruction on how to wield a weapon, seriously bowed my head, and somehow received advice. According to the old man, even I don't know how much I've changed since I first lowered my head to him. However, the old man, sensei and

Laraana, and Forna and Farga too. I think I'm quite blessed by my circumstances.

"Hey, Velt. I heard you started doing delivery, yeah?"(Gatekeeper 1)

"This time, take my order, please!"(Gatekeeper 2)

"No, I can't take it right now! Come by to eat!"(Velt)

Passing by the carefree gatekeepers, I went outside the capital after a long time. Right, it's been a while.

"Ah, right, mom and pop's grave are in the capital and our home got razed to the ground... I haven't been out since then have I."(Velt)

Since then. Since the day I lost mom and pop. I'm not particularly scared. However, I'm slightly apprehensive. Right now, I'm still weak. I'd be killed in an instant by demons and devils.

"Sheesh, I'm an idiot. There are countless countermeasures against the demon invasion at the border, but one still got through."(Velt)

So, it's alright. And yet, it's dazzling. Our house burning brightly. Mom and pop, covered in blood. No, that's not it. I'm still scared. I told Forna and sensei that I was fine, but I wasn't actually alright. As I had these thoughts, my pace naturally quickened. I want to leave this place quickly. My heartbeat quickened.

"*Haa, haa, haa*, here. It's been a while, since I've come here."(Velt)

The neighborhood elderly couple. I've met them a couple times with father. They were always jovial and happy. I haven't seen them ever since mom and pop's funeral, so they're probably going to be surprised. Without taking it too seriously, I opened the door.

"Heeey, delivery's here—"(Velt)

However, my voice didn't come out.

Instead, I only heard sounds of panic coming from inside the room.

"G, Gramps! Grandma!"(Velt)

There's an unpleasant feeling. My body was covered in goosebumps. Before I realized it I had run into the room, and I saw it.

I found Gramps and Grandma collapsed on the floor.

Next to them stood a tall, mysterious person, fully clad in jet black armor, with blue hair, red eyes, and pointed ears. No, not a person. It looks like a person, but it's not.

——A demon.

"Th, this, bastard, you..."(Velt)

Now, I can't think anymore. Why is it here? How did it get here, past the border? Are there others? For what purpose? None of it mattered. Recalling that day in a flashback, I prepared my baton and charged forward.

"I'll kill you!!!"(Velt)

However,

"I did not harm them! I beg of you young one, overlook this!"(Demon 1)

The young, handsome demon said something unbelievable right before I hit it. It prostrated. Honestly, I had no idea what happened. However, I refocused immediately.

"“Overlook this,” don't screw with me! You killed Grandpa and Grandma, how could I ignore that!"(Velt)

"I did not kill them! They are just sleeping from magic! I promise, I do not care what happens to me. Please overlook it. Help me!"(Demon 1)

What is it saying, this demon? This situation. And the conspicuous sword at its waist. It's a demon soldier no matter how you look at it. Furthermore, that dignified armor can't be mass-produced. If it has that, it has to be quite high-ranking. It's taller than the average man. Not quite two meters (6'7"), but it's close. It's strong no matter how you look at it. And, it has the power to kill me in an instant. Yet, why is it begging for its life?

"Ruuga... What are... doing..."(Demon 2)

That was, the unbelievably feeble voice of a young child.

"W, wh, what's going on?"(Velt)

I didn't realize it. In the corner of the room leaning against the wall was a

young demon child, on the verge of death.

She had long silver hair, and radiant red eyes which were on the verge of closing. Furthermore, she had pointed ears unlike a human. She wore armor fit for a child with her bottom covered by a white skirt. She seemed to be the same age as me and Forna.

"Ura-sama, you mustn't speak. Please leave this to me!"(Demon 1 -> Ruuga)

Looking at the expression of the soldier named Ruuga, as well as the condition of the child named Ura, even I understood what was going on.

"Young human boy, we are demons. We fought against humans and have run far away, all the way here. We wish to return to the demon country, but have already run out of provisions, and are in trouble as you can see. I beg of you, please share your food. That is all!"(Ruuga)

It doesn't seem to be a lie. They truly seem to be desperate. However,

"Don't screw with me by saying crap out of your own convenience! Grandpa and Grandma refused, so you made them sleep, and once you recovered, you were planning to steal from them?"(Velt)

"Th, that is—"(Ruuga)

"Either way, you probably deserted after being beaten, so stop bullshitting me! Why do I have to help you anyways!?"(Velt)

Truthfully, I don't hate demons. Mom and pop were killed by a devil. I know that. However, ever since then, I've found it hard to deal with anyone that looks different.

"I am sorry... But, please understand. I certainly killed humans during war. I am willing to accept any punishment, even death. However, this child is different. She absolutely cannot afford to die. I beg of you. Provide us with provisions. We will leave quietly afterwards."(Ruuga)

Bullshit.

"Don't fuck with me! As if I could trust *your* promise!"(Velt)

As Ruuga looked up from his dogeza, I gave him an axe kick. Even with the strength of a child, it's a strike to the head. Ruuga's expression distorted a bit.

"You'd go on killing humans if you kept living I bet! I don't know who that girl is, but here and now..."(Velt)

And then it happened. Ruuga grabbed the sword at his waist. I'm dead when he pulls that out. I really am a fool. If I obediently handed over the food, I might have survived. However, at that moment, I was too frightened to run away. I was going to be killed. The moment I thought that, I couldn't believe what I saw.

"W-what, what are you..."(Velt)

Blood was scattered about. However, it wasn't my blood. The blood was blue, demon's blood. Ruuga had cut off his left arm. Together with a gauntlet, the left arm rolled on the floor.

"If you wish it, I will cut of my right arm as well. Though it pains me to only be able to prove my feelings in this manner... Please, have mercy."(Ruuga)

Wouldn't it be better to just kill me? I'm small fry that would die instantly you know? Are you trying to show me chivalrous spirit? From a demon? I thought he was just a thief showing off his pride? No, that's not it. He didn't think about it that all. He desperately sought to help the demon girl, that's all.

"Ha... I'm also intolerant... aren't I."(Velt)

He's the real deal. You would know just by looking. And yet, compared to my fear of devils, I was afraid of demons for a different reason. It's not like I had a grudge, nor did I have the desire to kill them from the bottom of my heart.

"Today, what I do here, must be taken to the grave without telling anyone."  
(Velt)

Opening the lid of the box I carried, fried rice, gyoza, and soup were placed in front of Ruuga.

"I am in your debt!"(Ruuga)

With an expression of relief, Ruuga bowed until his head touched the floor once again, and immediately rushed over to the fallen girl.

"Ura-sama, open your mouth, slowly, please eat."(Ruuga)

"U, uuu..."(Demon 2 -> Ura)



"Do not panic. Slowly."(Ruuga)

It was slow at first, but the girl named Ura slowly began to move her mouth. She's probably extremely famished. Her countenance slowly became more lively. As I watched them, Ruuga appeared ready to cry at any moment while having a delighted expression. All he could do was repeat "thank goodness" countless times.

"Oh my, have I just condemned humanity to destruction?"(Velt)

I grew slightly dejected. However...

"Ah..."(Ura)

"Hm?"(Velt)

"...Thank....you."(Ura)

Though she was considerably thin, I'm certain she said the words "thank you." Well, It's not like I hated it.

## Chapter 18: The demon king's daughter and the axe kick

I let uncle and auntie sleep on the bed.  
They are sleeping well, and since they don't seem to particularly have any injuries, I'm relieved.

"I cannot find the right words to say for this occasion. Truly, thank you."  
(Ruuga)

"I was saved thanks to you. Thank you from the bottom of my heart." (Ura)

Ruuga is calming down in the living room, and Ura was somehow restored to life.

For the time being, I'm relieved that there doesn't seem to be a development like 'you saved us, but we will kill you.'

"Boy, what is your name?" (Ura)

"It's Velt. Rather, you call me boy, but aren't you about the same as well?"  
(Velt)

"Mu, nn, well, that is true, but..." (Ura)

"By the way, how old are you? You're not actually ten thousand years old or something, right?" (Velt)

"Don't be absurd. Only ten years have passed since I was born. You don't really believe in the superstition that demons have perpetual youth, right?." (Ura)

"Aah, so you're the same age as me huh. I'm ten years old as well." (Velt)

Looking at Ura kinda reminds me of Forna.  
It's how she makes adults feel embarrassed and acts so self-important, even though she's just a brat.  
However, the most similar thing is their aura, or rather, the dignity that drifts around them. Just, it feels as she's from some kind of other world, not just because she's a demon.  
Probably because of her harsh journey until now, her flowing hair isn't in order. Her damaged armour and clothes are all worn out as well.

However, even so, something I sense in Ura herself was not something to be harmed.

“Hahaha. I see, so Velt-dono is the same age as Ura-sama. With that age, having the courage to face a demon like me and be compassionate is admirable.” (Ruuga)

“It kinda hurts my heart when you say it like that. I mean, from the start, I was planning to abandon you guys.” (Velt)

“Even so, you saved us, did you not?” (Ruuga)

“In exchange for your arm, though.” (Velt)

“Something like that is cheap.” (Ruuga)

He really is noble. In the past, I thought these types of people were straight laced, or show offs, but now I just think he’s cool.

And then, Ura, who such a man would risk his life for.

I have become interested in these guys’ identities.

“So, in the end, who are you guys? Which national army of the demon king are you part of?” (Velt)

“Ah, that reminds me, I still hadn’t given you my name. My name is Ruuga. I am a soldier of the 『Vesparda Demon King National Army』that is lead by『Sharkryu』-sama, one of the『Seven Great Demon Kings』, and I am currently serving as the captain of princess Ura’s elite guards.” (Ruuga)

“And, I am Ura. Ura Vesparda. The daughter of Sharkryu, one of the seven great demon kings, the princess of Vesparda demon king’s nation.” (Ura)

“Like, I feel like I’ve heard about Vesparda somewhere, hm? Sharkryu?” (Velt)

I topple over with the chair.

Those are the words I heard quite recently from Farga.

“Wait, aren’t you guys the ones that destroyed the Bolbaldie Kingdom!?” (Velt)

“Yeah.” (Ruuga)

“Wai-, wait, you’re the daughter of one of the se se se, seven great demon kings? Yo-, you’re a demon king’s daughter?” (Velt)

Well, I strangely ended up understanding it. I certainly heard that the demon king’s army is approaching.

By taking into consideration that Ura's identity is the demon king's daughter, it makes sense why I sensed something in Ura, and explains Ruuga's loyalty. But still, for the person I coincidentally saved to be the demon king's daughter, haven't I done quite an awful thing?

"Like, crap, eh, what? You guys better not have come to destroy this country! Like, even though the army is lying in wait at the national border, how did you slip through them!" (Velt)

Although I saved them, depending on their objective, it's a completely different matter.

By saving their lives because of my half hearted whim, they might destroy this country.

With that thought, hostility naturally came out from my innermost depths of my heart, but Ruuga and Ura calm me down in a panic.

"Wait, we certainly destroyed the Bolbaldie Kingdom, and I admit that. However, we don't intend on invading or attacking this country. On the contrary, we no longer have any power to do so!" (Ura)

"I apologize, Velt-dono. We will have to first talk about ourselves." (Ruuga)

No power? I don't know what that means, but Ura's expression after saying that became awfully dark.

"First of all, under demon king Sharkryu-sama's orders, we fought Bolbaldie and destroyed it. We also killed a countless number of humans, like you. Of course, we protected the ones that surrendered and the citizens that couldn't fight, but... no, that is just an excuse." (Ruuga)

Destroyed. Even if they say that, it didn't click for me. Destroying one country is too big of an incident that I can't even imagine it. No, I don't even want to imagine it. I become scared from just thinking about if the country Forna, sensei and everyone is in disappeared. Ruuga seems to be trying to take me into consideration, but that consideration kinda hurt as well.

"Well, it's fine. I don't have any people I know in that country anyway." (Velt)  
"Hmm? You are surprisingly optimistic. I was sure you were going to speak ill of murder." (Ura)

“Ahh? Even if I say something like that, you’re probably going to say some random stuff about what war is. I’m not interested in that. As long as there’s no danger to the people I know, though. Rather than something like that, let me hear the rest.” (Velt)

Getting angry or flustered over each thing is kinda wrong, I think. That’s why, I could only behave like I don’t mind it.

“I see. The continuation, umu, after destroying the Bolbaldie Kingdom, we, the Vesparda demon king’s national army, advanced to the empire. However, we were defeated by『Humanity’s Great Allied Forces』and the『Hero』, so we took to our heels.” (Ruuga)

“What? Oh, I thought the hero defeated an amazing demi-human general, but he also defeated the demon king, huh? He really is a good kid~.” (Velt)

“I won’t deny that we lost. The hero was strong. I didn’t think there would be a human that could exchange such a fight to the death with demon king-sama.” (Ruuga)

While saying that, Ruuga and Ura both look frustrated. Well yeah, the man he serves, and the man whose her father was defeated. Their feelings of not being able to just recognise the opponent is understandable.

“So, did the demon king die?” (Velt)

“No, just before he was about to be killed, resolving ourselves for dishonour, we took Sharkryu-sama out of the one-to-one fight, and retreated straight after that. Their pursuit was intense as well, and many of our comrades were killed, but we somehow protected demon king-sama. However, we got separated mid way and I was the only one that remained of Ura-sama’s elite guards.” (Ruuga)

“Fu~n, so you kept running away like that, and when you realized it, you were starving, all the way in this remote region. That must have been quite the trouble.” (Velt)

I see, so that’s what happened.

When Farga said the demon king is heading to this country’s direction, he meant the demon king that took to his heels is escaping this way.

“I-, I wasn’t able to do anything!” (Ura)

As soon as I finished talking, Ura frustratedly strikes the floor.

“Although I forcefully made my father let me travel with him for the time when I can someday lead the soldiers, when my fellow countrymen and my elite guards were defeated in front of my eyes, when everyone lost their lives in pain, I couldn’t do anything!” (Ura)

“Ura-sama...” (Ruuga)

“What a princess! I followed him by saying such impertinent things like ‘I want to learn the atmosphere of the battlefield’, and yet, I!” (Ura)

Vexation. Rather than from losing to a human, it looked like it was from her being frustrated at her own powerlessness.

For some reason, that appearance overlapped with mine when old man and mum died.

“I apologize, Velt-dono. It was Ura-sama’s first battle. She obviously didn’t fight, nor did she murder anyone. However, she was made to see the overwhelming air of death, despair, and many seas of blood that had red and blue mixed together. The ones that continued protecting princess since she was very young with me, and at times laughed together died in action as well.” (Ruuga)

To be frank, it’s troubling if she cries. Even if a demon that came to kill humans lost to a human and cries, as a human, I can’t do anything, and I have no words to say to her.

I don’t know anything about war either.

“There’s nothing I can say.” (Velt)

“Velt-dono?” (Ruuga)

“Anyways, the point is. My volunteering ends here. You guys should leave before uncle and auntie wake up. And, you better not come to Elfarshia Kingdom.” (Velt)

Don’t be moved by them. Don’t have anything to do with them. Right now, there’s nothing I can do, and Ruuga and Ura understood that much. They simply nodded silently.

“That certainly is true. Sorry. Nothing would happen if I just complain to you.” (Ura)

“Sorry ‘bout that. I’m bad at lecturing people and giving kind words. I’m not

that much of a good human either.” (Velt)

“Fu-, you’re slightly interesting. In the end, although I saw the hero with these eyes, I did not actually talk to him. Therefore, this is my first time I have talked with a human of the same age as me.” (Ura)

“Ooh, is that so. Well, I didn’t think the first demon woman I talk with since I was born would be the demon king’s daughter.” (Velt)

There’s nothing more to talk about, and it’s better for both of us if we don’t do anything unnecessary.

No matter what we talk about here, or what impression we have of each other, it doesn’t change the fact that I’m human and these guys are demons.

“Lastly, as a thanks, have this ring.” (Ura)

Ura takes off a ring that was put on her small finger.  
A jewel that had a beautiful, emerald green shine was set in it.

“A ring made from a scale taken off one of the world’s three great jewel dragon, Emerald Dragon. If you sell it in the human’s world, you will never be troubled for money in your whole life.” (Ura)

“Eh! Se-, seriously? Are you giving me such a stupidly expensive thing?” (Velt)

“Yeah.” (Ura)

Ooh, I got an unexpected additional income. Rather, in the end, is she a billionaire?

Noticing that my thoughts that were serious until just earlier became worldly minded thoughts, I felt a bit pathetic.

Well, there shouldn’t be any problems to take it if she’s giving it to me.

But, taking this would also mean I’m indicating something.

“I see. So if you’re giving this to me, that basically means..... we’re even, right?” (Velt)

The next time we meet, it will be as a human and a demon..... that’s what it means.

Ura must have been thinking that too, but probably because she didn’t think I would ask that, she has a slightly complicated expression.

It might have been a mean question to ask a ten year old brat, but even so, it’s necessary for me to confirm it.

Then, as if to calm down the awkward atmosphere, Ruuga, who had been silent, forced his way through.

“Leaving that aside, you seem to be using an interesting weapon, Velt-dono. I think that was a demi-human’s teacher cane.” (Ruuga)

It’s obvious that he’s purposely speaking with a cheerful voice, but it’s fine.

“Yeah, I’m a strange guy after all.” (Velt)

Without having to ask Ura, I already know the answer. That’s why, I won’t ask any more than this.

“That’s right. I remember now from you saying strange. It was an emergency earlier, so I let it pass, but.....” (Ruuga)

“Ann?” (Velt)

“About that way of kicking when you kicked my head.....” (Ruuga)

“Aah? Are you talking about my axe kick when I kicked you while you were kneeling on the ground?” (Velt)

What is it? Did it actually hurt? However, from my words, Ruuga and Ura make surprised faces.

“Axe kick? That’s surprising. I thought your kicking style was the same by coincidence, but do you know about the axe kick?” (Ruuga)

“Haa? I know about it, but it’s not that much of a special kicking style.” (Velt)

No, it might be unusual in this world where they fight with weapons and magic. When I was Asakura Ryuuma, it was even famous for people that didn’t do karate.

“No, it is a special kicking style. That was was our demon king’s, Sharkryu-sama’s special move.” (Ruuga)

“Kuhahaha, you serious? Something like a demon king doing an axe kick, is this a joke? It would be funny if he did karate as well.” (Velt)

That’s kinda interesting.

I don’t know the demon king’s fighting style at all, but I thought he would have some kind of technique where he causes a natural disaster with some powerful magic, or have some demon king sword that has ridiculous destructive power, but for it to be an axe kick, this must be a joke.



“! Impossible! Why does Velt-dono know demon king-sama’s secret fist, karaate!” (Ruuga)

Eh?

“Father was famous for only using martial arts in the whole demon nation. Why do you, a human, know the name of the unique fist technique, karaate, which father invented, and can only be used by him?” (Ura)

The atmosphere changed. Ruuga, Ura, and I who heard those words right now.

“Demon king-sama only told the name of karaate to a very few amount of people. Velt-dono, excuse me, but where exactly did you hear that name?” (Ruuga)

My mind started spinning round and round.  
The reason I know karate is simple.

It’s because karate is a martial art in Asakura Ryuuma’s world.

For this reason, I wanted to ask a question in return. Why the demon king knows about karate. If he can use it.

Right now, I made various hypotheses. But, would something like that really be possible?

“Ura, did your father invent karate? He didn’t learn it from someone else?” (Velt)

“No, he didn’t learn it from someone. Besides, only the very few people who had talent know of the karaate, and learnt those techniques from father. I am one of them though.” (Ura)

The demon king can use karate? He knows about it? Why?

No, if the demon king really is the only one that can use karate, I can only think of one answer.

But, would such a unbelievable thing.....

“Oi, the demon king is alive right? Where is he, right now?” (Velt)

“That is..... what will you do from knowing that? Are you going to tell the allied forces about it?” (Velt)

“I might be an old acquaintance of that demon king.” (Velt)

I can't just not check.

To be honest, I'm fully aware that it's dangerous.

Sensei told me to not be so fixated with Asakura Ryuuma, but even so, I had to make sure of it no matter what.

“That reminds me, there was one person in Asakura Ryuuma's class that was in the karate club.” (Velt)

I couldn't help but remember the past.

## Chapter 19: The demon king's wailing

Thinking about it carefully, it was strange.

Since the Bolbaldie Kingdom was destroyed, even the peace complacent Elfarshia Kingdom should have strengthened their border security.

In spite of that, it was strange for the demi-human that killed my old man and mum to enter the kingdom and escape without being caught. Ruuga and Ura being able to enter the country is strange as well.

However, I can understand from seeing this.

“I didn’t know that a huge tunnel like this had been dug.” (Velt)

The world of darkness that continues forever is being illuminated by a small flame that Ruuga turned on with magic.

It’s in the forest of monsters that is situated to the royal capital’s east. It’s quite a long way off the wheat field I was living in.

Normally, humans don’t approach it much, and because the monsters live deep in the forest, they don’t walk in on human’s lives.

From one glance, it looked like there’s something like a cave in that forest, but a tunnel with a maintained road that expanded the deeper you go, with enough capacity for one body of troops to pass through had been made.

“So the demons and demi-humans used this, huh.” (Velt)

“We only used it just recently. In the first place, the one who made this tunnel was the Bolbaldie Kingdom. In other words, humans, like you.” (Ruuga)

“Wha-, what!?” (Velt)

“With the objective to gather information from other countries, the Bolbaldie Kingdom extended tunnels all over the continent as a military operation.

Towards other humans, their brethren, as well. However, recently, they tried to reach our country too.” (Ruuga)

“I see, so that’s why you destroyed them. While you’re at it, you can earn an enormous amount of profit if you take all the tunnels as well.” (Velt)

“Exactly. We turned the tables on Bolbaldie with their tunnels, and used their tunnels to destroy Bolbaldie in one go.” (Ruuga)

“You really have no mercy. And so, even though you guys achieved such a victory at great pains, you lost to the hero because of a sudden attack. That’s kinda pitiful as well.” (Velt)

Wait a minute, was there a possibility of our country being destroyed by Bolbaldie? Well, since fighting within the same race is a taboo in this era, I guess I’m overthinking it.

“We split up with demon king-sama while using the tunnel in our escape. Although we also wandered aimlessly in the tunnel, in the end, only Ura-sama and I remained.” (Ruuga)

“And, we’ve been walking quite a lot, but do you know where the demon king is?” (Velt)

“Don’t worry about that. When we were waiting for our brethren that split up in the tunnel, we made sure to leave signs and messages like this. In accordance with this, Ura-sama and I were planning to meet up with demon king-sama, but we took a substantial amount of time, so Ura-sama was at her limit from the repeated fatigue and hunger that attacked her, so we hurriedly went out above ground.” (Ruuga)

Alongside the cave’s wall, I found a column of smooth stones piled on top of each other. They were piled up intentionally, and it’s something like a code among the demons.

“After a bit more, there’s a large hollow inside. There, demon king-sama should have made a base where the surviving soldiers can rest, while waiting to join up with the other soldiers.” (Ruuga)

I only considered this now, but am I really going to be safe?  
It has only been a short acquaintance, but I don’t have any hostility towards Ruuga and Ura.  
However, although they lost in war and are exhausted, the people I’m heading to are the demons that killed countless humans.  
And, many of the demons’ comrades were killed by humans.  
Will I be killed if I’m exposed? No, in the first place, what should I do if I guessed the identity of the demon king wrong?  
I started sensing danger to my life little by little, but I was a bit late to sense it.  
There were light and presences deep in the darkness, and I could also hear a

voice. One person, two people, it wasn't at the level of something like ten people.

There, I could see a scene I've never seen before since I was born.

"We have arrived. I'm glad, it seems they are still camping here." (Ruuga)

"Velt, wear your hood. You definitely can't show your face." (Ura)

In the spacious, large hollow, monsters in an inhumane appearance were camping.

People who are on look out, people who are relaxing while sitting down on the ground, people who are refining their weapons, people who are drinking alcohol, and a line of people who are lying down, with injuries all over their bodies.

It's a place that look like a campground and a field hospital was combined. Obviously, there isn't a single human.

Only the demon race, that has an appearance similar to humans, and monsters that are neither beast nor human, that have an appearance similar to an oni.

"Ma, madam!"

"Notify the whole army, Ura-sama has returned."

While shedding tears, the demons on lookout press both their hands together in worship.

Then, they raise their right fists to the sky, and in this well echoing cave, they raise their voice as loud as they can.

"Ura-sama and Ruuga have retuuurned!"

With the voice they raised, everyone gets up and turns around. From perceiving Ura and Ruuga in their eyes, little by little, their expressions crumbled and they shed shaking tears.

"Ura-sama! I am relieved you are safe!"

"As expected of Ruuga-dono! He splendidly protected the princes, u, uuuuuuu!"

"Now, Ura-sama, this way. Sharkryu-sama is waiting."

Even demons cry, huh. The dirty male demons dragged along their bodies that are covered in injuries and congratulated the princess's return.

In front of the demons that killed humans, these emotions I have might be wrong, but looking at the crying demons, I thought "Well, isn't that nice?", and

lightly smile.

However, immediately after that, my whole body stiffened.

“Ura, and Ruuga.”

Breathing becomes difficult. The footsteps that approach step by step, the approaching pressure.

There isn't anything like hostility, but probably from the tension because of the war, his presence is completely different.

I can tell without having being given his name. A presence in a different league to the other demons.

“This guy is, the demon king?” (Velt)

As if making sure of it with a low voice, I ask that. But, at the same time, I am slightly doubting my eyes.

Certainly, the demon that is approaching has a special presence.

However, that appearance was close to a human.

His height was also around the same as an average human man. Even with a special physique as an excuse, he's not slender, and is normal.

His face seems like he's in his twenties, and he has long, black hair.

Without the pointed ears and red pupils, he wouldn't look like a demon.

“Ura, and Ruuga. Welcome back.” (Sharkryu)

They immediately get on one knee in front of the demon king, and after the demon king's aura towards the two slightly calmed, he greeted the two.

“Ruuga, well done protecting Ura. I cannot express this in words alone.”  
(Sharkryu)

“Haha, I am grateful for your words! I am relieved you are safe as well,  
Sharkryu-sama!” (Ruuga)

While enduring tears, Ruuga rubs his forehead on the ground. Then, the demon king gently pats his shoulder.

With those thanks, Ruuga's body shook and he cried.

And then,

“Now, Ura. Show your face clearly to your father.” (Sharkryu)

“Father.” (Ura)

“You look slightly worn out. It must have been tough. It must have been painful.” (Sharkryu)

The demon king gently hugs Ura. Even Ura became slightly embarrassed and tried to twist her body, but as expected, she’s still a child. The fact that she’s come back to her father properly registered, and she put her hands around the demon king’s neck with wet eyes.

“U, uuu, father, to, to protect me, everyone, everyone in the royal guards, Runba, Baldo, Johnga, everyone, everyone was killed by humans.” (Ura)  
“I see. So they passed away.” (Sharkryu)  
“Father, I am frustrated. Frustrated at myself, who couldn’t do anything! At my weak self!” (Ura)  
“Yeah, I know.” (Sharkryu)

When I realised it, as if encircling the two, many injured demons were shedding tears. Sadness from the death of their brethren. Frustration from losing a war. Resentment towards humans. I didn’t even think the first time I would see a demons for the first time in my life would be at a timing like this.

“Ura. I am also frustrated. I was no match for the hero youngster. Even with the strongest troops, the strongest subordinates, and my strongest demon fist, we are in this sorry state.” (Sharkryu)  
“Fa-, father, we have not lost yet! If you are in good health, we will not be destroyed! Once we reorganize order, we can someday take this resentment out on the humans!” (Ura)

They still haven’t lost, and the demon king is still in good health. If the demon king says a single word, this corps would immediately let out a war cry. However,

“No, Ura. We have lost.” (Sharkryu)

An unexpected phrase came out of the demon king’s mouth.

“Fa, father!” (Ura)

“The hero was a splendid youngster. While having a fragile body, he fought fair and square with me without any tactics. Although he was my opponent, I was completely fascinated by that straightforward spirit. And, I lost. Not only in

power, but also in spirit.” (Sharkryu)

“Ple-, please do not say such a thing! I do not want to hear those words from father.” (Ura)

For better or worse, war depends on the king’s words. If the king says to fight, you have to march even if the opponent is a god or a devil, and it’s over if he admits defeat.

The demons here are all looking down, as if the thing that was holding up their spirits had all crumbled down.

“Then, what will you make the people of our country do? At this rate, they will be absorbed into neighboring demon countries and our country will be destroyed!” (Ura)

“That’s right. It is already the end. It will be the end of our country, just like Bolbaldie.” (Sharkryu)

“No way! Wh-, what are you, what are you saying!” (Ura)

Ura tears away the demon king’s arms that are holding her closely, and although childish, she glares at him with eyes expressing anger.

“Then, where will the souls of our killed brethren, our comrades, filled with regret, go! By destroying the foolish living things called humans who defiled this world and did nothing but increase, we can give a tribute to their souls. That is our mission!” (Ura)

I’m a human as well though.

“That’s true, Ura. I don’t intend on forgiving the living things called humans either.” (Sharkryu)

“If so!” (Ura)

“However, the young hero whose strength and spirit exceeded mine said that he wants me to believe in the humans.” (Sharkryu)

The demon king narrows his eyes. He is probably thinking back to the human he fought.

“While escaping this far, I thought about it what the very best option is. What I can do right now. The wounds I got from the hero’s blow of justice won’t heal so easily. By just gathering the survivors, overturning the war situation is impossible. The humans have already grasped most of the exits in this tunnel,



and they will find us someday.” (Sharkryu)

“Father, in that case, are you telling us to obediently surrender! To believe in the hero!?” (Ura)

“I do not know how that will turn out. Even though he is a hero, he will probably not be able to go against the flow of the masses. Even if we surrender, our tribe will probably be decapitated. The same will happen for the war leaders as well. Furthermore, the soldiers will all become prisoners, and they will be arrested in jail for the rest of their lives, or they might become slaves. I do not know what will happen.” (Sharkryu)

I vaguely understand the story. The demon king no longer has any intention to resist, as he believes that they can't escape annihilation, even if they fight any more than this.

However, since he doesn't know his opponent's approach, he can't take action. After all, even if they surrender, they might all be executed, or be made to taste pain even worse than death.

The demon king thinks the hero is trustable, but when asked if he is going to trust humans, his opinion wavers.

It seems it has become a slightly difficult story.

“Uhh, I'm sorry for asking this while you're busy, but can I finish my business soon?” (Velt)

It would probably be better if I settled my part quickly.

While everyone nearby had fallen silent, I settled my thoughts and raised my hand.

Of course, everyone turned their attention to me.

“That reminds me, I had been curious since some time ago, but who is that person covered in a hood?” (Sharkryu)

At the demon king's words, Ura and Ruuga stand in front of me in a panic.

“De, demon king-sama, thi, this person is someone who saved Ura-sama's life, and is not our enemy, and-” (Rugua)

“-Velt! I'll listen to your request later, so just be quiet for now!” (Ura)

“Ah, the atmosphere seems kinda awful already, and I want to make it clear right now. So uh, sorry.” (Velt)

I take off my hood. In that instant, a shock ran through the demons who were in a silent state, and angry roars flew about in the next moment.

“It, it’s a human child! Why is a human here.”

“Did he come to kill us? Or, is he a pursuer!”

“Don’t go easy on him just because he’s a child. The hero was a brat like him too!”

I guess it would be hard to accept me. Well, that’s obvious though. Rather, I’m not gonna be killed right? I’m counting on you guys to back me up, Ruuga and Ura.

“Quiet down!” (Ruuga)

As expected of Ruuga. With his voice, all the demons’ angry roars suddenly stopped.

“This young man certainly is a human. However! While understanding the danger, he saved Ura-sama from the verge of death! Do not be rude towards us demons’ benefactor!” (Ruuga)

A commotion occurs among the demons that didn’t know the circumstances, and then confusion flows in.

Well yeah, it’s understandable that they wouldn’t be able to believe it. Besides, although I’m a child, apparently my age isn’t that different to the hero.

They probably wouldn’t just let me off because I’m a child.

As long as they aren’t very tolerant, that is.

“Is that true?” (Sharkryu)

The demon king opens his mouth.

“It is true, father. I was saved by Velt here. Besides, Velt is a human from the Elfarshia Kingdom. He has no connection to the current war.” (Ura)

As if trying to protect me, Ura also explains the circumstances to the demon king. In that moment, the pressure leaking out of the demon king slightly loosened.

“I see. In that case, I have to thank you, youngster. I cannot get along with you because of the flow of the current world, but as a father, I say my thanks to

you.” (Sharkryu)

“Ah, ahh, nah, you don’t have to do anything like that. I was going to abandon her depending on the situation anyways.” (Velt)

“You can choose a reward. If it’s a precious metal, you can even sell it for a high price in the human world.” (Sharkryu)

After saying that, the demon king tries to take off the ring that’s put on his finger. A jewel that had a beautiful, scarlet shine was set in it. Even without knowledge about jewels, I can tell. It seems extremely expensive. Wait, this isn’t the time to be doing this.

“Wait. I would be pretty thankful to receive something like that, but the reason I came here was not to receive a reward, but to ask demon king-sama something.” (Velt)

“Hmm? Something you want to ask? Is that something like why I am making war?” (Sharkryu)

“No no no, I won’t ask something so advanced. There’re probably circumstances for that, and I’m not interested in that.” (Velt)

Yeah, I only want to ask, no, make sure of one thing.

“I’m going to ask a reaaaally strange question now, but if you don’t understand, that’s fine. I’ll just be silent and return.” (Velt)

“I don’t mind. Go ahead and ask it.” (Sharkryu)

I’m getting slightly nervous. Rather, what should I do if I check and he really is that person.

After all, isn’t he the demon king? I wonder what reaction he’ll take~~

“Are you Samejima from the karate club?” (Velt)

What’s he going to do? Because of the extremely sudden and incomprehensible question, Ura, Ruuga, and the other demons have blank faces.

Then, the demon king says,

“..... Youngster.” (Sharkryu)

For one moment, when I thought that it had quietened down like a beach that doesn’t have a single wave,

“Where did you..... where did you learn of that  
naaaaaaaaaaaaaame!?” (Sharkryu)

His jet black aura increases enough to cover the inside of the cave completely,  
and squashes me.

Craaap, he’s seriously scary.

But, I wonder why.

Even though I thought this demon king that’s several times stronger than the  
demi-human that killed my old man and mum is scary, I didn’t feel any fear of  
death.

That is because right now, I learnt this guy’s identity.

“Father, what is wrong, father!” (Ura)

“Demon king-sama, keep composed! Ve-, Velt-dono, what did you ask right  
now! Who is Samejima of the karaate club?” (Ruuga)

The demon king is probably in disorder from this helpless situation.

“Say iiiiiiit! Answer meeeeeeeee! Why do you know, that name! You bastard,  
who the hell are you!” (Sharkryu)

I might have been like that if my position was the same.  
When I met with sensei, ramen was there, which softened the shock, but this  
time, it was sudden.

“Calm down. Before I answer that question, is your identity really Samejima?”  
(Velt)

“Wh-, why, why, why, why, why!” (Sharkryu)

Nevertheless, I see, so you weren’t reincarnated as a human huh.....

“Did you forget about it? I ran with you in the relay at the athletics festival,  
you know?” (Velt)

“Wha-!!!!” (Sharkryu)

“We won that relay, and we high fived, even though it was out of character for  
a delinquent like me.” (Velt)

*“Delinquent? Delinquent, ah..... no..... no way..... no way!” (Sharkryu) (TL*

*Note: When he first said delinquent, he said it as if he didn’t know what that*

word meant.)

“At that time, I learnt that you were unexpectedly a passionate guy..... well, we weren’t especially close or anything, but I didn’t think we would reunite in this way.” (Velt)

The demon king’s expression changed.  
It’s not a king’s face filled with dignity.  
It’s not a father’s affectionate face either.  
It’s exuding the kind of weakness a child that was lost for a long time, lonely, in pain, and helpless, would show.  
No one among the demons would have seen that before. The demon king’s real, honest face.

“It’s me. Asakura Ryuuma.” (Velt)

I just answered with a smile to my old friend that I finally reunited with.

“A..... Asaku..... Asakura..... are you really Asakura?” (Sharkryu)  
“Yeah.” (Velt)

“Tha, that’s a lie, since, since, I thought all my memories of that world were just delusions.....” (Sharkryu)

“It’s understandable for you who wasn’t reborn as a human to think that. It must have been quite tiring.” (Velt)

“A, A, Asakura..... o, oooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!!” (Sharkryu)

The demon king’s wailing simply resounded in the cave.

TL Note: The ‘Same’ in Samejima’s name means shark, so that might be how the author came up with Sharkryu.

## Chapter 20: Our true selves

The guards, Ura, and the others tried to stop him when the demon king said ‘I want to talk with just the two of us’, but right now, we are in his tent together. After making sure that no one is listening, we started talking to each other.

“For the time being, it’s been a while, Samejima.” (Velt)

“Indeed, it has been..... ohon, y, yo, it’s been a while, Asakura.” (Samejima)

The demon king became a human high schooler  
I unintentionally burst out into a roar of laughter.

“Kuhahaha, to think that straight laced, Mr diligent in the karate club would become demon king-sama. Why don’t you just refer to yourself as ‘the great me’ while you’re at it?” (Velt)

“Gu-, I, I’m fine! I really was reborn and raised as the demon king! Rather, I’m older than when Samejima Ryouichi died, so it’s even more unnatural now!” (Sharkryu)

“Kuhahahaha, your tone changed back to a brat you know? Like, hasn’t your character changed too much?” (Velt)

“It’s just that you haven’t changed at all! Rather, what is that appearance! How old are you right now!” (Sharkryu)

“Ten years old. Apparently I’m the same age as your daughter.” (Velt)

The person in front of me was no longer the demon king. It was Samejima.

“When I remembered about the name Samejima and about Japan, to be honest, it didn’t matter to me. I thought I really was the demon king, and only considered it as seeing a strange illusion.” (Sharkryu)

“Well, I guess something like that could happen? It was a mysterious feeling for me as well.” (Velt)

“There was no time to think about it since it was during war, but..... all those memories were real, huh.” (Sharkryu)

“Yeah.” (Velt)

At the start, it wasn’t clear since his character changed too much, but now

he's returned to being a normal high schooler.

"And so, the memories you thought were delusions are all good up until the field trip, right?" (Velt)

"Ye, yea. I remember up to the part where the bus fell. Haaa, I wonder which one was my true self." (Sharkryu)

"Well, I can get that. For a while, I didn't know whether I was Velt Jeeha or Asakura Ryuuma either." (Velt)

"I see. It's ironic isn't it. I took a step forward into the path I was never going to return to again, and continued fighting with human soldiers, even though my identity was originally human." (Sharkryu)

"Yeah, you had bad luck." (Velt)

"Good grief, concluding it in a single remark like that. My reincarnation life was stormy and full of drama you know?" (Sharkryu)

To be honest, it's not like we were that close with each other. We didn't eat lunch together, or go out to play on the weekends. We did run together in the relay at the athletics festival just that once, but we didn't have any connection other than that. But, I wonder why. Our conversation didn't stop.

"If all of Sasajima Ryouichi's memories of that world are things that really happened, and weren't illusions..... I think I was happy in those days. School was fun, and our class was the best." (Sharkryu)

"Well, kinda." (Velt)

"Everyone was interesting. Miyamoto, the poor talking, shy, and hesitant guy was actually an absurdly strong member of the kendo club. Kagami, who despite being loose around women and was a good looking playboy, was unexpectedly thoughtful of his friends. Ayase, the most beautiful person in our school who was the tennis club captain. Biyama, who despite normally being a really flashy and indecent gyaru, was really pure. Oh, yeah, the Kimura and Murata combination, Kimurata, who always hung out with you normally participated in events after you started coming to school as well." (Sharkryu)

I remember it as well. Leaving aside whether we are close, there were various types of people in our class, and it's really nostalgic.

"And, Samejima, even though you were called diligent and straight laced,

inside, you were actually the hot blooded Mr popular as the ace of the karate club.” (Velt)

“Hahaha, I really can’t forget Asakura Ryuuma, a delinquent that constantly fought, but was softhearted and surprisingly had a strong sense of duty, and couldn’t be honest to the girl he liked.” (Sharkryu)

“Oi oi, shouldn’t the one you can’t forget be Kamino, who had the least characteristics in that class full of people with strong characters, but stood out quite a lot?” (Velt)

“Ah, as I thought, you liked Kamino?” (Sharkryu)

“Eh, ‘as I thought’? Was I that obvious?” (Velt)

“Almost everyone knew about it. Rather, I can say it because it’s now, but your romance situation had quite a lot of attention, you know?” (Sharkryu)

“Tch, I wasn’t that shameful.” (Velt)

“No, not like that, it’s because Ayase and Biyama liked you.” (Sharkryu)

“Eh? Seriously!” (Velt)

“Yeah. If I remember correctly, Ayase said something about how you were on her mind ever since the school festival, when you carried her on your back to the infirmary, since she was about to collapse from overworking after her executive committee work finished.” (Sharkryu)

“Wait, that was only because there were no other guys nearby other than me and I was asked by Kamino, so it’s not like anything in particular happened.” (Velt)

“For Biyama, she fell for you the moment you got the class an overall victory as the anchor in the relay after she made the overall victory chance become hopeless by falling over during the *centipede competition*.” (Sharkryu) (TL Note: A race where everyone runs in a line with their feet tied to each other’s feet.)

“Oh, that, Kamino looked like she was about to cry, so I tried to win even if it killed me, but wait, when they flashed a peak of their underwear to me ever since then, was that on purpose? Crap, I’m getting kinda embarrassed.” (Velt)

“Hahaha, you blended into the class too much to call yourself a delinquent. You were quite popular with everyone, you know? Among the guys, people were even betting what would happen to you and stuff.” (Sharkryu)

It was fun talking with him. Even if we weren’t that close in our past lives, I didn’t think my heart would feel saved this much just from having topics in



common to talk about.

However, although we were Asakura Ryouma and Samejima Ryouichi, right now, we are Velt Jeeha and demon king Sharkryu.

Right now, that truth is a constant.

“Hey, Samejima. When did your memories return?” (Velt)

“During the coronation ceremony when I was fifteen years old. It’s a story thirteen years prior to now.” (Sharkryu)

“I see. Sooo, you’re twenty eight now? Even though we died at the same time, we didn’t reincarnate at the same time. It seems there’s some calculation error.” (Velt)

“Yeah.” (Sharkryu)

“And, during this calculation error, by the time you realised it, you became demon king-sama, huh. That’s ironic.” (Velt)

It certainly is ironic. However, that one word probably isn’t enough to describe it. Demon king Sharkryu advanced too far into a path that I can’t even imagine.

Since he is living as the demon king, Samejima understands that plenty, as well. However, now that he learnt that his past life as Samejima Ryouichi is all real, he cannot help but be perplexed.

“Asakura. Even I know how extreme it is to say I’m going to kill all humans. But, I just couldn’t forgive them. I couldn’t help it. You know, I.....”  
(Sharkryu)

Samejima started talking weakly. But, I didn’t want to hear it.

“Wait, hold up, what are you going to do by telling me about that? Do that to someone other than me. Even if you give excuses to me at this point in time, nothing’s going to change.” (Velt)

“A, A, Asakura.....” (Sharkryu)

“Even if you regret it, you can’t just go back. That’s the way it is, right? You lived as demon king Sharkryu after all.” (Velt)

Despite showing a complicated face at my words, Samejima nodded.

“That’s right. I can’t go back anymore.” (Sharkryu)

“In that case, don’t say it. Sorry, but I can’t support you. You should be the one

to think about how you're going to differentiate between what's right and wrong." (Velt)

"Differentiate..... huh." (Sharkryu)

"Yeah. I don't know why you became like this, but even if you ask me, I'm not that great of a human to say whether it's right or wrong, and above all, the current me doesn't have any power to stop you. If the demon king's way of living is of a second year high school student's in mental age, you shouldn't be doing something like asking a brat that's currently ten years old." ( Velt)

The current me is exceedingly powerless.  
I don't even have any words to give him.  
After all, even if I tried to, they would all become cheap words.  
It's pathetic, but there's nothing I can do.  
If there was one thing I could do, it's to

"I won't listen to your complaints, but in exchange, if you want to rely on me no matter what, if you ask me to help you, I'll help you as long it's within the extent of what I can do." (Velt)

do what I can up until the extent of what I can do.

"Idiot Asakura, making me remember about Samejima Ryouichi again. And you have really no mercy, just like in our past lives." (Sharkryu)

"You must have lived a really tiring life." (Velt)

"Why, why didn't you come to see me faster?" (Sharkryu)

"Sorry 'bout that. I wasn't born yet when you regained your memories." (Velt)

"Good grief. But..... thanks for coming to see me." (Sharkryu)

Samejima answered with a smile, saying that was plenty.  
Samejima had an expression that looked like some part of him felt refreshed.  
I don't think an existence like me had that much of an effect on him, but now, he's making a comfortable face as if the burden he was carrying became lighter.

"I also said this to my daughter earlier, but we lost. I don't intend to continue any more useless conflict. I will obediently surrender." (Sharkryu)

Probably because he decided on the way he would take responsibility, he chose that quite quickly.  
However, at the same time, surrendering signifies farewell.

“I don’t know what’s gonna happen, but execution wouldn’t be out of the question, you know? Maybe life imprisonment if you’re lucky?” (Velt)

“Yeah, I’m fully aware of it. All of the responsibility I lead and started. I don’t think much will happen with just this one head, but I’ll at least draw the curtain with my own hands for the end.” (Sharkryu)

“Keh-, trying to act cool. Are you thinking about it reasonably? You can just run, you serious guy. Well, do what you want.” (Velt)

Samejima and I both know what will happen if the demon king surrenders. Even after crossing through our past lives and finally reuniting, this will probably become a farewell for eternity.

“I’ll go see you if you get thrown into a police cell, while holding a gift of tonkotsu ramen.” (Velt)

“Yeah. Someday, someday, let’s meet again. If you like, maybe even in our next life.” (Sharkryu)

“That’s such a nasty joke for us.” (Velt)

High five.

Didn’t we unintentionally do it when we won the athletics festival? I didn’t think it would turn out like this at that time, but it seems we’ve come a ridiculously long way after dying.

“Hey, Asakura. Sorry to ask this just before we part, but I have one request.” (Sharkryu)

Request? It’s giving me a bad premonition. With such a serious face, isn’t this guy going to just readily request something troublesome from me?

However, that prediction came true.

Samejima didn’t properly understand the “extent” of my “within the extent of what I can do”.

Towards the ten year old me who has no power nor talent,

“I’m going to use that ‘no matter what’ at once.” (Sharkryu)

“Ha?” (Velt)

“I’ll have you escape before the pursuers of the allied forces arrive, but I want you to take Ura with you as well!” (Sharkryu)

Ha?

“Haa? Idi, thi, this isn’t a joke, why me!” (Velt)

“And, a request for after I die! Please, I want you to protect Ura from the humans.” (Sharkryu)

The demon king who is Samejima, while also being Sharkryu suddenly kneels down on the ground in front of me.

“Wait, oi oi oi oi wait wait wait wait! Stop prostrating as the demon king! Like, if someone saw this scene, wouldn’t I be killed?” (Velt)

“Please! I only have you to rely on!” (Sharkryu)

“No no no no, what are you saying. Why do I have to do something like that!” (Velt)

“I don’t mind dying. I resolved myself as well. However, only my daughter is different. I want Ura to see a much, much wider world. It’s a parent’s selfishness. I don’t want Ura to die.” (Sharkryu)

Wait a minute, first of all, calm down. Suddenly telling me to protect the demon king’s daughter, what’s he saying?

“Asakura, I will probably die. The pursuers of the allied forces will probably be here soon. If we’re caught, Ura and I will certainly be killed. I don’t mind if I’m killed, but Ura is different. I don’t want Ura to die. However, in this situation, I can’t send Ura back to the demon country either. Besides, even if I sent her back, I can imagine what kind of treatment she will receive as the princess of a defeated country. I just want that girl to not die!” (Sharkryu)

“Even so, think about the person you’re asking! After killing humans relentlessly, you’re telling me to protect your daughter? Look at me! I’m ten years old! A ten year old brat! I’m a farmer’s son that isn’t a hero, and doesn’t even have talent in magic! Asking that sort of guy to protect the demon king’s daughter, of all the people there could be, is being unreasonable!” (Velt)

“She’s not the demon king’s daughter. She’s my daughter!” (Sharkryu)

“It’s the same either way! It’s not like asking me to look after your dog or cat!” (Velt)

“I know I’m asking the unreasonable! But, you’re the only person I can cling to. There’s no one other than you I can rely on!” (Sharkryu)

“Don’t fuck with me! There’s a limit to being shameless! You better not be thinking I would do anything you ask me just because we were acquaintances in

our past lives! More like, I wasn't even that close with you, was I?" (Velt)

"I thought of you as a friend!" (Sharkryu)

"Don't go saying whatever's convenient. Without thinking about the trouble you're giving to me, doing something like forcing me to take care of your kid....." (Velt)

While talking, it gave me deja vu.

Before, there was an extremely troubling brat whose parents were killed, and unreasonably made his past life's high school homeroom teacher take him in.

"Either way, it's impossible for me. I can't protect her. Besides, it would be bothering to the people around me." (Velt)

"No, you will do it. Although you would always say "I'm a delinquent", "it's too troublesome", or "I'm tired", in the athletics festival relay, you seriously ran while holding the baton that everyone linked together." (Sharkryu)

"Y-, you hardhead! The situation is different to the athletics festival relay! Who am I? I'm Asakura Ryuuma. A helpless delinquent, that's trash, stupid, and..... even after dying, that stupidity became irreparable, and..... is always full of regrets." (Velt)

To be honest, I wanted him to stop. It's not because I personally thought it was troublesome.

It's because I know that it's definitely impossible for me. Because he is overcome with emotion from meeting me for so long ever since our past lives, Samejima is overestimating me.

"Protecting the demon king's daughter means that I'll have to protect her to the end, even if the world turns against me. That kind of important role..... is impossible for me." (Velt)

While saying that, I felt I was pathetic. The fact that I'm hopelessly powerless pierced my body.

Even though the demon king is seriously lowering his head, I could only say that it's impossible.

However, it was at that moment. I heard noisy voices and screams from outside the tent.

"U, uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!"

“Hi-, hiii, it, it, it’s humanity’s great, allied forces!”

“Shit, shit! We were found! We’ve been found!”

I hadn’t forgotten. Just, I wanted to forget about it for now.  
The fact that this is a battlefield.....

## Chapter 21: Fear without ill intent

Inside the cave, the sound of something destructing and exploding resounded.

“Uwo-, wha, what!” (Velt)

“What is happening!” (Sharkryu)

What reflected in our eyes as we rushed out of the tent in a panic was an unbelievable amount of armed human soldiers taking a fighting stance.

“As I thought, you were in here, you demons!”

“We finally found you! Don’t think you can escape any more!”

The armour of the soldiers that rapidly came out of various holes did not belong to just one country.

Silver armour, red armour, blue armour and various other colours were there, with the same emblem carved into its chest.

A crest of the sun.

“A sun of hope..... these guys are『Humanity’s Great Allied Forces』!”  
(Sharkryu)

“They are..... it’s my first time seeing it..... so, what are you going to do, Samejima?” (Velt)

It’s the army that continued fighting the best demons and demi-humans of numerous countries, 『Humanity’s Great Allied Forces』.

They are warriors of justice that gathered under the reputation of the hero and the other champions.

“Cra, crap, we’ve been found!”

“Shit, what do we do, there are so many of them!”

There are a lot of injured people too, so they haven’t made any preparations. To be frank, there’s no way we have a chance of winning.

Therefore, Samejima, who already decided what he needed to do, loudly declared.

“I am one of the seven great demon kings, Sharkryu! It is our loss for this war. We will completely surrender!” (Sharkryu)

A shock ran through the inside of the cave. Without being able to hide their confusion from the demon king’s declaration, the demons and humans made a commotion.

“My brethren, cast aside your weapons! It is our loss in this war. Any further conflict is useless.” (Sharkryu)

That’s reasonable.

“Fa-, father.....” (Ura)

“Ura-sama, it is unfortunate, but here.....” (Ruuga)

“Kuh.....” (Ura)

There are about three hundred demons inside this cave. Humanity’s allied force of over one thousand people surround them. From the reality that they can’t overthrow them, many demons dropped their weapons and dropped on their knees while shedding tears. I can feel chagrin from Ura and Ruuga’s expressions as well.

“Well, that’s understandable.” (Velt)

It can’t be helped.

I obviously thought that.

Even an amateur like me knows what would happen if they resisted in this situation.

However, I didn’t know.

How cruel war would make people.

“I wonder if your bitter declaration really is true.....”

That was a voice that came from the bewildered humanity’s great allied forces.

Then, humanity’s great allied forces that had taken a military formation opened a path, and a『Woman』appeared from the inside of the tunnel.

“General Gyanza!”

General.



The moment I saw the woman that was called that, my whole body froze.

“Wh, who, is she? .....!” (Velt)

Instead of armour, she’s wearing a black coat, and on her head, instead of a helmet, she’s wearing a black cap with a wide brim, that doesn’t suit a battlefield.

Her hair is long, light, and iridescent. Her body line is slender, and above all.....

She was more beautiful than anyone.

She brings about a mysterious aura that doesn’t feel like there is any filth on her.

I might be laughed at if I say it aloud, but I almost murmured “Angel”, and “Goddess”.

She looks like an existence that’s completely far off from war.

However, the problem is not her appearance.

The fact that she’s the general even though she’s a woman? That’s also wrong.

“M, my sweat..... it’s not stopping..... my trembling..... what the hell is this!” (Velt)

The moment I saw her appearance, I was attacked by an image of death even more so than when I saw the demon king.

Fear? Chills? Despair? No, it’s not something at that level.

“Something” that is full of darkness is making my mind feel like it’s going to break.

If I’m aimed at, I will definitely be killed.

It was terrifying enough to make me believe that.

“Fu-, to think you of all people would be the pursuer. The empire’s strongest, Gyanza of the smile.” (Sharkryu)

Even Samejima, a demon king, has a stiff face.

Who the hell is this woman? Or rather, is she really a human like me?

She seems quite young. Twelve..... in her teens..... fourteen to fifteen? Then,

“Tha-, that person is!”

“Gyagyagya, Gyan..... za, Gyanza, he said!”

The demons that were fascinated by the woman called Gyanza changed their faces all at once.

Stiff faces of fear. Among them, it looked like hatred was included in it too.

“Tha, that person is..... you areeeeeeeeeee!” (Ura)

Ura suddenly raised a voice of hatred, out of her emotions.

With a expression filled with deep, deep hatred, she glares at Gyanza.

However, Gyanza didn’t become perturbed at all. Far from that, she showed a smile filled with love, as if her heart was unintentionally beating faster.

“So, it seems you are princess Ura. Nice to meet you, hello.” (Gyanza)

She is not overpowering her. However, instead, that was irritating Ura’s nerves.

And at the same time, I once again became scared. Each and every action Gyanza takes is helplessly dreadful.

“Sharkryu of the seven great demon kings. We, humanity’s great allied forces, have arrived in the name of justice. However, you have unexpectedly shown a will to surrender already, but what is the true motive behind it?” (Gyanza)

“There are no true motives, it’s exactly as I said. I do not have anything like an ulterior motive. We have already lost this war. I was defeated by the hero, and cannot overthrow the war situation. It is our loss.” (Sharkryu)

As the demon king, and as the representative of the army and the country, Samejima stated the truth.

To the demon king’s complete surrender declaration, humanity’s great allied forces once again showed an unexpected face and became surprised.

This woman as well.

“Is that so.” (Gyanza)

Gyanza is making a slightly surprised face as well. However, she immediately reverts to her smiling face.

“That is a very noble decision. Sharkryu. Although our races may be different, I admire your the proud demon king’s decision.” (Gyanza)

“I see.....” (Sharkryu)

“Fufufu. I wish the other demons king-samas and the four heavenly beast demi-humans would follow your example. Since for the people who stand at the top, there is nothing more painful than shedding unnecessary blood in useless conflicts.” (Gyanza)

The discussions seems like it will be able to progress quite easily.

However, I couldn't help but think it was strange.

As far as I've seen, she looks like a kind, understanding woman.

Then, why is Samejima, Ura, and the other demons' expressions stiff?

And, I personally thought it was strange.

Although this woman is so beautiful and is showing a kind expression, why does she feel so terrifying.....

“U-, uu..... that is why I am sad, Sharkryu.” (Gyanza)

It was at that time.

Tears flowed out from Gyanza's eyes.

They looked sad, complicated, and as if she's in pain.

Why?

And then,

“Sharkryu..... why would you tell that sort of lie?” (Gyanza)

I doubted my ears.

“Whether they are enemies or allies, a surrender declaration is made so that neither side has any more victims..... they are words that inform the close of a harsh, sorrowful war..... and yet, why would you use that as a strategy to deceive your opponent?” (Gyanza)

Am I the strange one for thinking this is strange?

No, that's wrong.

“As if it would be a lie! Gyanza, my army is already in an annihilated condition! They have no morale nor fighting spirit! Calling my surrender a trick, there is a limit to being rude!” (Sharkryu)

Samejima talks back without a moment's delay, but that expression looked as if he knew it would turn out like this.

No, Ura and the other demons also have that expression.

“Please stop disgracing yourself by lying. As the proud demon king, please don’t ruin yourself any further” (Gyanza)

No, wait, is this woman even listening to the conversation?

“Don’t fuck with me! We have thrown away our weapons, our mana is exhausted, and you should already know that we do not have any troops in ambush! On the contrary, what profit is there if I plan something in this situation, you bastard.” (Sharkryu)

“It is because you are the demon king.” (Gyanza)

“Wha, what!” (Sharkryu)

“You are the demon king. I at least know that you are hiding one, turn-around move that I cannot even imagine with a head like mine.” (Gyanza)

Just in case, I glance at Samejima. “A turn-around move? I don’t have anything like that.” is written all over his face.

Despite that, why does this woman say such things?

“Sharkryu..... your wife was the same.” (Gyanza)

“!!” (Sharkryu)

“For the sake of harmony between humans and demons..... for the sake of ending the war..... she wants to tie a treaty of friendship between different races. Despite saying that, the demon ambassador.....” (Gyanza)

Samejima’s wife? The one in this world.....

And, I guess she would be Ura’s mother?

“However, I knew it. A treaty of friendship was just a great lie. I knew that they actually intended to attack the empire by using that. Therefore..... therefore.....” (Gyanza)

While shedding tears, Gyanza talks about it.

In that moment, as if something burst open, Ura shouted.

“Don’t fuck with me! Mother, mother was in sorrow because of this world filled with long lasting wars, and for the sake of the people, for the sake of the world, she went to you bastards so that she could tie a treaty of friendship! Because of a baseless assumption made by you bastards, mother was.....

mother was killed!” (Ura)

Sympathizing with Ura’s words, the demons bit their lips in frustration and are glaring at Gyanza.

I was able to somewhat understand Samejima and Ura’s ill feeling towards humans.

However, this woman alone is different. Despite being same humans, I can’t understand her speech, conduct, and thoughts at all.

“Princess Ura, unfortunately, I know whether someone is telling a lie or not. Even for me, that was a very sorrowful war.” (Gyanza)

“That’s a lie! How can you tell without even listening to them! Without even talking to mother, you attacked mother who was heading to the conference!” (Ura)

Ah, I see.....

I can’t understand her thoughts. That was the answer to everything.

“No, I talked with your mother. However, your mother is sinful..... no matter how much I tortured her, she would only repeat the lie that she wants to tie a treaty of friendship. Even until the very last moment when she took her last breath, she only continued saying that lie.” (Gyanza)

I finally understood it.

I understand why I can’t understand this woman.

“It’s as if the conversation doesn’t establish inside of this woman.” (Velt)

This woman isn’t mad.

It’s not like she has ill intent either.

She purely assumes things, and then takes action, thinking that’s what is right.

In other words, she’s a genuine idiot.

“Ge, general, please take in consideration that hero-sama said to cordially give protection to people who don’t resist.”

“They don’t seem to be..... telling a lie..... I think.”

“Um, although you are still fifteen years old, I am aware how great and talented you are, but in war experience we are still..... and from what we have seen, they are.....”

I'm glad that her close aides seem to be able to think normally.  
More like, I don't know how talented she is, but fifteen years old is..... in the first place, doesn't she need to take a national language test to become a general?  
Close aides, say more to her.....

"You think? What foolishness! Are you prepared to lead the world to destruction from the actions of your assumptions! Do you not understand how much danger assumptions create in a battlefield!" (Gyanza)

The close aide's head was..... sliced off.

I reflexively doubt my eyes, and by the time I realised it, a violent nausea was attacking me, but it wasn't the time for that in this situation.

Together with tears, Gyanza, who had resolved herself, started to pull out a sabre that a female servant handed to her, and raises it up.

"I inform this to humanity's great allied forces, Gyanza army's main body! The enemy is Vesparda demon king's national army! As long as we do not know the enemy's plan, mercy is unnecessary! Exterminate them immediately!" (Gyanza)

""""Ooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!!!""""

With their unwavering justice, they broke into a run to exterminate the evil demons.

## Chapter 22: My old friend is far, far away

“What’re you gonna do, Samejima? Do you have any ingenious, demon king-like ideas?” (Velt)

“Fu-, I want to hear one if you have any. Not being able to surrender in *shogi* is quite tough.” (Sharkryu) (TL Note: Japanese style chess.)

Just as Samejima said, he has already lost this battle. However, even if they understand that he’s been checkmated, this battle doesn’t allow resignation.

Humanity’s great allied force’s merciless cleaning up started.

“Uwaaaaaaaaa!”

“It, it’s no good, let’s escape! If we enter some tunnel and escape.....”

“Ah, they were lying in wait for us on this side!”

“Shit! This side as well, we’ve been surrounded!”

“Wha, what the hell..... we don’t have any way to escape.....”

Even in this wide hollow, humanity’s great allied forces have surrounded the demons without a single gap, and the encirclement steadily contracts. Without any ways of escaping, we are just in the centre, helpless.

“Shit! In that case, let’s break through from the front!”

“As if I could stand dying! My wife and my kids are waiting for my return!”

“Even I’m getting married after this war is over! I’m definitely returning!”

Some of the demons pick up their weapons, and boldly rush out in order to break through the encirclement.

However, no matter how strong demons are, they are soldiers that are already exhausted.

On the other hand, Gyanza’s army is an elite force with good coordination.

“Earth attribute magic unit!”

“Haha! Judgement of the ground to the evil sinner who stands in the way of the mother goddess’s guidance!”

“Boulder Toss!”

Mages that wore robes appeared in the front lines of the encirclement. When they raise their staffs and chant, large boulders that were created with the power of magic are fired towards the group of demons all at once.

“Gugyaaaaa”

“Gyapu”

A countless number of rocks many times the size of a demon rain down incessantly, crushing ten to twelve demons and scattering blue blood.

“Be, Bengal’s unit was!”

“That’s a lie…… Gyagan was also taken down…… even though he still had a young kid!”

“Shit, shit, shit! What is this treatment to us, you damn humans!”

What am I looking at?

Burning passion; a large number of blood seas; the smell of scattering excreta. ‘I might be able to meet my old friend’…… just because of that thought, I came all the way here, but I had forgotten.

Right now, the world is in war.

“Please don’t joke with me, you people always deceive us with those sorts of lies. You destroyed the Bolbardie Kingdom like that as well, right?” (Gyanza)

While feeling sadness from this war, Gyanza is accusing him while shedding tears.

“I know that even demons should have hearts. They should have hearts to love or protect someone. Despite that, why do you people only perform unjust actions? I definitely cannot forgive that!” (Gyanza)

She’s drunk with herself.

Drunk with herself that has no choice but to carry out justice while being burdened with sadness.

Dialogue itself is meaningless to this woman.

From the start, nothing you say reaches her.

“I, will, I will kill that woman! I will definitely kill her!” (Ura)

“Please calm down, Ura-sama.” (Ruuga)

“How can I calm down! By that, that mad woman, mother was! And now, my



important comrades!” (Ura)

“I know. Of course I know.” (Ruuga)

While holding back Ura who seems like she will jump out at any time, Ruuga glares at Gyanza.

“..... To overthrow this situation..... there is only one thing.” (Ruuga)

“Ruuga?” (Ura)

“Princess, in a second, this Ruuga will become a devil, and defeat the enemy. It will only be for a short while, but princess, please allow your guard to leave you.” (Ruuga)

“Wha, what are you planning to do, Ruuga!” (Ura)

“The most fundamental way of ending a war. Killing the enemy’s general!”  
(Ruuga)

“Gyanza, huh..... I understand. Certainly, you are the only one that can do that. However, don’t be unreasonable. You must return without fail. This is an order!” (Ura)

“Even if it costs my life!” (Ruuga)

On one knee, Ruuga makes an oath as a knight.  
Each and every word he says is packed with extraordinary resolution.

“Velt-dono.” (Ruuga)

“Ah?” (Velt)

“I apologise. It doesn’t seem I will be able to protect it..... my oath that I will no longer kill humans.” (Ruuga)

“Oi!” (Velt)

Bloodlust overflows from Ruuga’s expression.

“Lucas! Puppy! Gather everyone who can move immediately, and follow me!”  
(Ruuga)

“Ruuga-sama!”

“Right now, when Sharkryu-sama cannot fight, we shall abolish this situation alone! Break through the encirclement, and no matter what, protect Sharkryu-sama and Ura-sama!” (Ruuga)

In this situation where we have been cornered, a capable and trusted commander is needed to reorganize their allies.

“Uoooo, you humans! We will show you our pride as demons!” (Ruuga)

By taking the initiative and going to the front, Ruuga, who had the role of guarding Ura, is trying to encourage his surviving comrades and lead them.

“Tha, that is..... the demon king’s right-hand man, the demon sword master Ruuga!”

“Decapitate him! If the demon king cannot move from the wound hero-sama gave him, he is the cornerstone of this army!”

It seems that Ruuga’s name has even reached the human society. My impression I felt when I first met him wasn’t that much of an overestimation.

He lost one arm because I argued with him, but his strength and force is unbelievably far from my imaginations.

“Zuaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Ruuga)

Like a scrap of paper, the crowd of humans are cut up extremely easily.

“Alright, follow Ruuga!”

“Aim for the enemy headquarters!”

Ruuga, no, the demons have changed into beasts. Carrying that vigour without change, the humans are kicked about in succession.

It was a scene gruesome enough to make me want to cover my eyes, but it was firmly scorched into my eyes.

“So strong, thi, this is, this is Ruuga!”

“He, he’s killing so many by himself! Kuh, the others are taking the opportunity as well.....”

“Not good, stop them! Those guys are aiming for the general! Protect general Gyanza!”

However, Ruuga and the other demons’ vigour isn’t stopping. Humanity’s great allied forces step in front of Gyanza and try to solidify their defences, but this vigour can reach them. Countless arrows of magic are sent flying to stop Ruuga, but Ruuga kicks through them.

“So strong.” (Velt)

“Of course he is, Velt. Ruuga is someone father and I trust, and is the strongest champion, even in our country.” (Ura)

I unintentionally murmured. Saying that while he’s killing humans with reckless abandon is a bit off, but his strength is the real thing.

Ura and I both thought that.

And then,

“Aah..... how sad, even though I want us to understand each other so much, we aren’t able to..... war is such a sorrowful thing.” (Gyanza)

One swordsman appeared in the front.

“Eh, whaaaaa!”

“Gen, general Gyanza!”

That must be a lie, that woman! Far from solidifying their defences, she personally went out to defeat him.

A strategy? No, the guys guarding Gyanza are panicking.

It’s completely her own judgement.

However, this is a chance.

No one is trying to prevent the two of them.

Ruuga and Gyanza. If Ruuga defeats Gyanza here, this battle will end some way or another.

“Demon sword master Ruuga..... I wanted to meet you in a different era...”  
(Gyanza)

“Gyanzaaaa! I will take the head of the queen’s enemy soon! Take my strongest blow!” (Ruuga)

Ruuga’s long sword, and Gyanza’s sabre.

Just before the two of their specialized weapons increased their speed crossed over each other.....

“! Not, not good, escape, Ruuga!!!!” (Sharkryu)

Noticing something, Samejima shouts at him.

And then, I also notice.

It was only for a moment, but “something” is overflowing from Gyanza’s body.

The black aura that looks like a huge skull shows a smile.

“Chronos Crusade.” (Gyanza)

I heard her quietly murmur that.

With just that, the sabre Gyanza was holding returned to its sheath without being swung.

I don't know what happened.

Ruuga doesn't stop either. The moment Ruuga's blade is almost about to send Gyanza's head flying,

“Eh.....”

“..... Ru..... Ruuga?”

Pieces of meat scatter to the point where you wouldn't be able to tell what the original shape of them were.

It took a bit of time for Ura, the demons, and I to realise those scattered pieces of meat was Ruuga.

The scattered pieces of meat and large amount of blood depict a cross on the ground, as if making him an example.

“A cruciform cut made by mastering high speed, speed of sound, speed of light, and godly speed. I would not have been able to defeat you if I hadn’t shown this technique. We were not able to understand each other until the end, but that strength is worthy of praise, demon sword master Ruuga.”

(Gyanza)

From the overwhelming shock, none of us were listening to Gyanza's words of praise.

However, the moment we realised the chopped up things that didn't leave any traces was Ruuga, a shout and a scream of sorrow resounded.

[illegible]

(Ura)

Ura becomes frantic, but I couldn't stop that.

Even I hadn't been able to put everything in order in my head.

Ruuga, who had been laughing with me until just recently, was chopped us,

without leaving any traces.

“U, uoe..... wha, what the hell is this..... am, am I in hell?” (Velt)

This isn't good, I have no gastric juice, so I can't even vomit.  
I don't have any material pain at all, but my spirit can't last anymore.  
At this place, I will.....

“..... Asakura.....” (Sharkryu)

My name? Who is it? No, thinking about it normally, there could only be one person.

It's Samejima.

“Wha, what is it..... haa, haa, haa.....” (Velt)

“It might be tough, but I want you to exert yourself somehow.” (Sharkryu)

“Aah? There's no way I can do something about this situation! More like, I'm a human, so I don't have to worry about being killed..... no, that's doubtful. That stupid general wouldn't overlook a human that's close with demons after all.”  
(Velt)

Although there's no reason for me to be killed, I can't wipe my premonition that I'm going to be killed no matter what.

Then,

“Don't worry. I definitely won't let you die.” (Sharkryu)

With his injured body, Samejima murmurs that as if he decided on something.

“What are you?” (Velt)

“Are you listening? I'm going to break through the encirclement now.”  
(Sharkryu)

“Haa? What were you looking at right now. Ruuga, who was supposed to be leading that, got turned into pieces you know?” (Velt)

“Yeah, but there's one more suitable person to lead the soldiers.” (Sharkryu)

“Suitable person? ..... wait, oi!” (Velt)

By the time I realised Samejima's thoughts, Samejima was kindly hugging Ura, who had lost her composure.

“Fa, father..... Ryu, Ryuuga was..... Ruuga was.....” (Ura)

“..... Ura.....” (Sharkryu)

Samejima’s appearance is one that I have seen somewhere before.  
Oh, that was from just recently.

Samejima’s current appearance looks exactly like my old man and mum.

“Ura, please live. Even if I fall down to hell..... *“I” will be watching over you! You don’t have to be burdened with anything, and just be happy. That is Ruuga’s, your dead mother’s, and my wish!*” (Sharkryu) (TL Note: Starting from the I, he starts talking like Samejima, not the demon king.)

“Fa..... father?” (Ura)

“Asakura!!! I’ll leave the rest to you!” (Sharkryu)

“Wait..... heeeeeeeeeey!” (Velt)

There, the Samejima I knew was no longer there.

Only the demon king that rules his opponents with overwhelming mana and power was there.

Demon king Sharkryu roars.

Then, in the next moment, blood starts violently flowing from Sharkryu’s body.  
The wound given to him by the hero had opened.  
The engraved, painful-looking wound opened further.  
A wound that definitely needs rest to heal.

“Listen! O foolish humans!! I am Sharkryu, the strongest of the seven great demon kings!!” (Sharkryu)

That was the demon king’s last words of encouragement.

“Although we died oceans in blood, we fought so that we could someday obtain this wonderful world!

But, this body will meet its ruin before long, from the powerful hero’s holy sword!

However, I will not just die!

Instead of choosing a proud, manly death, I choose death to survive!

My proud brethren! Now is the time to offer your lives to me!

Not a single one of us is allowed to die! Die to survive!

Right now, demon king Sharkryu will teach you his last plan!

Everyone, follow me!” (Sharkryu)

Don’t stay silent and be killed.

Die while fighting.

Sharkryu shouted.

Then, what will happen? The pessimistic guys who were on the verge of death just a moment ago temporarily became one life and burned the flames of their heart.

“Uooooooooooooooooooooo!!!!”

Demon king Sharkryu, and all the demon king’s brethren transformed into devils..... no, they transformed into fierce gods.

“A, amazing.....” (Velt)

Even I felt a welling up of an intense urge from the bottom of my stomach.

“Samejima..... you..... went quite far, huh.” (Velt)

I see my old friend’s back in the distance.

But, for this reason, I need to give him my own response.

“Fatheer!” (Ura)

I caught Ura by the hand, who was about to start running towards him.

“L-, let go, Velt! Father is! Father is!” (Ura)

“Yeah, he will definitely open a path. You absolutely can’t miss that moment!”  
(Velt)

“Velt..... what are you.....?” (Ura)

Something more important than the demon king’s life.

I don’t acknowledge it, but I have no choice other than doing it now.  
I’ll protect her!

“Ura, look for a gap so that you can escape from here with me.” (Velt)

“Do, don’t be absurd! If father is fighting, I will also fight! If everyone is going to die, I will also die fighting!” (Ura)

“Shut up, your old man doesn’t want that at all!” (Velt)

“N, no! Father, no, no, no, no! I will die as well! I will die fighting!” (Ura)

“Even if someone like you tried to do something, nothing will happen! He doesn’t want it, but if you want to fight no matter what, come back after becoming strong enough to not regret it! You and I, that is!” (Velt)

Ura really does have eyes that are prepared to die. Looking at that, I let out a sigh.

What was I like when I was ten years old?

Even Forna and Ura, why do so many of the women and children in this world not understand the feelings of men and their own parents.

“Also, the only ones that can say the words ‘I don’t mind dying’ in front of your old man or me, are the people that really have died once. Remember that.” (Vet)

I can’t do anything.

Listening to Samejima’s grumbles and complaints, or understanding them.

However, even so, I was entrusted with her. In that case, I need to live up to that much.

As a friend, and as a man.



## Chapter 23: A parent's wish, in regards to a child's will

I recalled the athletics festival.

— Asakura, I'll leave the rest to you!

When I was Asakura Ryuuma, Samejima said that as he passed the relay baton to me in the athletics festival.

Now, we have roles in completely different worlds to each other, as the demon king and a farmer's son. Despite that, I was told the same words from that time by Samejima.

That remained inside of me forever.

“Zuaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!” (Sharkryu)

Losing the traces of Samejima, the demon king transformed into a fierce god.

“You humans. Be afraid. Prostrate in front of this overwhelming power!!!!”  
(Sharkryu)

Letting them perform a suicide attack without the slightest fear of death is a threat that humanity wanted to avoid the most.

“Makyokushin Karate, Calamity Roundhouse Kick!!” (Sharkryu)

A natural disaster breaks out inside the large, airtight hollow.  
The big tornado that blows violently together with the kick was something that made a human's powerlessness known in plenty.

“It, it's a monsteeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeer!!”

The last brilliance of the demon king, who has already prepared to die.  
Although he had been defeated by the hero, people at the level of imperfect braves or champions can do nothing against him.

“Un, unbelievable, it's just a kick! The wind caused by the kick was far more amazing than wind attribute magic!”

“If, if this kind of thing was rapidly fired without chanting..... ho, how could we

stop it.....”

Now that I think about it, Samejima’s unconditional surrender was for the demons, but it was also for humanity’s great allied forces.

If Samejima fights, his injuries will spread and he will not escape from death. Even so, he can take on the humans here as many times as he wants if he feels like it.

“Makyokushin Karate, Horizon Quintuple Thrust!!” (Sharkryu)

He pushes out his fist. Even though that’s all he’s doing, it’s like a shock wave. With one fist, the whole body of troops in their strong army was blown away. All I can do is be amazed by this extremely unreasonable power.

“Uoooooooo, follow demon king-sama! We will definitely open a path!”

“At the very least, we will at least send us demons’ ray of hope to tomorrow!”

The demons that welcome death follow.

Exactly because they know they will die, they are all the more desperate.

“L, let’s go, Ura! Put your hood on; we’re going to slip into the confusion and escape!” (Velt)

“H, however..... however!” (Ura)

Ura is still hesitating.

Of course she is. Her real parent, and furthermore the people she was always with, are heading to certain death.

There’s no way a splendid princess can easily choose the option to escape alone.

However, we have no time to be lingering.

“Oi, is that small one over there princess Ura?”

“Guh, kill her! We will not have mercy just because they’re a child! Cut off all the chances of future revenge!”

Damn it, we were found!

They’re heading straight here.

Shit!

“Tch, just try coming here!” (Velt)

More like, why do I have to fight a human, an ally, to protect a demon's daughter!

Samejima..... on second thought, I'm going to resent you.....

"Youngster! Princess Ura!"

"Eh?" (Velt)

At that time, a demon soldier that I don't even know the name of stood in front of us, as if protecting us, and had his body pierced by the blades of the humans.

"O, oi!" (Velt)

Who are you! More like, it's a fatal wound; his heart was pierced!  
A demon I don't know the name of protected us.....

"That..... reminds me, in the end..... you don't even know who I am, but.....  
youngster, go.....!"

"!" (Velt)

"No matter what..... you must protect princess Ura no matter what! Counting  
on..... ga..... ha....."

Why are demons, like, ahh, I don't know anymore!  
If I haven't even asked for it, don't go willfully burdening someone with all these  
things!

"Ura, you know, it seems we aren't allowed to just die." (Velt)

"..... Uu..... why..... why does everyone....." (Ura)

"Look in front of you. I'm scared too, but I'll definitely overcome this. In this  
war..... if you survive, it's your win!" (Velt)

We can do it!

We'll break straight through without any tricks. There's no way the humans can  
easily defend against the demon king's power when he's putting his life on the  
line.

Since that encirclement was impossible to escape from, it means that the  
soldiers were scattered too much, so concentrating on one point to  
breakthrough is our only means of escape.

And, that hole is being spread out by Sharkryu's hand.

“Kuh, send out the other reservists!”

“It’s no good, if we do that, they’ll escape from the other tunnels!”

“However, at this rate, they’re going to breakthrough!”

Putting their lives on the line to resist was successful.

There’s enough disorder that the allied forces are having difficulty reorganising themselves.

If a huge air hole would just open, we could.....

“! Samejimaaa!” (Velt)

“Father! Above you!” (Ura)

In that moment, we coincidentally perceived it in our field of vision.

A woman that jumped over the encirclement, straight to Sharkryu.

“Makyokushin Karate, Calamity Roundhouse Kick!!” (Sharkryu)

“Samidare Hyakkiakusan.” (Gyanza)

After coming this far..... of course she would come out.....

“Hou, that’s quite the slash. To think you would counterbalance my demon leg with your sword.” (Sharkryu)

“I am the one that is surprised. Having that much power even though you are on the verge of dying..... it is admirable.” (Gyanza)

The moment Gyanza appeared, the demon army which had the force of surging waves stopped moving.

“Gya, Gyanza-sama! Gyanza-sama is with Sharkryu!”

“No, however..... the only one that can deal with that monster..... as expected, is our general!”

Just one more step..... if we can just do something about this person.....

“I see. So you made us believe you were trying to have an honourable death from suicide attacking, but the real plan was to let princess Ura escape alone in the confusion. Although she certainly is a child right now, she is your daughter. In a few years, she will become a threat to the world without a doubt.” (Gyanza)

“Fu~, a threat, huh. By the way, if I say I want you to overlook her because my daughter is going to peacefully spend her days as a woman that has forgotten wars from now on, will you suspect that I’m tricking you and refuse?”

(Sharkryu)

“What are you talking about. If that was true, there is nothing as wonderful as that. That is precisely why it is unfortunate. Because I know that is impossible.....” (Gyanza)

“Fuh..... I shouldn’t have..... aaaaaaaaasked!” (Sharkryu)

“Now, come, demon king!” (Gyanza)

The demon king and the monster general stands facing each other. Each of them are monsters.

An exchange of unseeable fists and slashes. That’s all I can see.

“O, ooo, g, go, Gyanza-sama! General Gyanza! General! General! General!”

“Demon king-sama! Demon king-sama, banzai! Demon king-sama, banzai!

Demon king-sama, banzai!”

Their fight is at the level that no one can interfere anymore.

If you take a single step near them, the meat level of your body will probably be smashed.

For this reason, each army is raising their voices to their generals so that at the very least, their voice can reach them.

“Fuu..... how troublesome..... I can definitely win if it is a drawn out fight, but..... however, if I do so, there’s a chance I may be struck by a different plan..... as expected, I will go for an instant killing here.” (Gyanza)

“You brat! Who do you think you are talking to!” (Sharkryu)

At that moment, Gyanza’s stance changed. That is the one she used to kill Ruuga.....

“! ..... Just from seeing it, my trembling is..... Samejima, this is risky, that technique is!” (Velt)

I recalled the disgusting scene of Ruuga being suddenly chopped up into small pieces.

Ura’s hand I’m holding is sweaty and shaking as well.

“Demon king Sharkryu. While having the power worthy of holding the demon king title, you have a weakness. That weakness, is that you do not use any weapons or magic, and only fight with your fists and legs.” (Gyanza)

In her stance, Gyanza started indifferently talking.

“Humans created the sword to obtain power. After obtaining wisdom, they mastered magic. The fusion of sword and magic is the strongest path. Meaning, with your conceited mind that thinks you can win without holding a weapon or using magic, you will not be able to understand anything!” (Gyanza)

Gyanza’s body relaxedly sways.

She’s coming.

Even while knowing she’s coming, her swordsmanship can absolutely not be blocked or seen.

“Chronos Crusade!” (Gyanza)

However,

“You don’t understand, brat!” (Sharkryu)

We doubted our eyes.

We certainly were not able to see Gyanza’s movements.

However, by the time we realized it, Gyanza’s sword was caught with Sharkryu’s hands.

“Wha, wha! M, my Chronos Crusade was!” (Gyanza)

“It’s my Makyokushin Karate, Shinken Shiraha Tori.” (Sharkryu)

We were certainly shocked, but this situation is obviously beyond expectations for the allied forces as well.

For the first time, Gyanza’s face became stiff.

Gyanza is certainly a monster general that is overflowing with terror.

However, Samejima is..... the demon king.....

“Brat, I’ll teach you. This is the path of never holding any weapons in your hands. Like I said, it’s karate! That is not conceit, but belief!” (Sharkryu)

“!” (Gyanza)

“And, I’ll teach this to you because I have the chance now. The one that created that path of karate, is not a demon. Like you bastards, it was a human!” (Sharkryu)

Strong! Samejima!

You are..... you are an amazing guy!

“This is the end!” (Sharkryu)

With his fist, Sharkryu breaks Gyanza’s sabre.

“Thi, this isn’t good, general!”

“Sto, stop it, Sharkryu!”

Gyanza, who had become unarmed, cannot beat Sharkryu.

This match is.....

“Makyokushin Karate, Consecutive Knifehand Strike!” (Sharkryu)

If he brings that knifehand strike down, it’s Sharkryu’s win.

Once Gyanza is dealt with, Sharkryu can avenge his wife by killing Gyanza.

However, without attacking Gyanza, Sharkryu instead released his knifehand strike behind him, towards the encirclement.

“!” (Velt)

“Fa, father!” (Ura)

The encirclement is penetrated due to Sharkryu’s knifehand strike, and although thin, a hole certainly opens, so a means of escape for Ura and I was made.

“G, goooooooooooooo, Ura! Asaku..... ga..... ha.....” (Sharkryu)

However, at the same time, Sharkryu’s body finally reached its limit, and while overflowing with blood from the wounds all over his body, he collapses after spitting out a large amount of blood from his mouth.

“Sa, Sameji.....” (Velt)

“Fa, father..... Fatheeeeeeeeeeeeeeeer!” (Ura)

“Sharkryu-samaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!”

“Demon king-samaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!”

That was literally Sharkryu’s last blow.

Rather than returning the blow and taking revenge, he chose the path of definitely protecting an important person.

“Le,..... let’s go, Ura!!!!” (Velt)

“Fa, father..... father..... no way, no way, no way! Father!” (Ura)

“I, idiot! He’s telling you to go!” (Velt)

Now is the only time.

I forcefully pull Ura, who is trying to immediately run over to her father, slip out of the encirclement and run deep into the cave.

“Youngster, gooooo!”

“Take care of Ura-sama!”

If I had any leisure to respond, I would be running even harder.

We’ll go out to the surface as fast as possible, and slip out of this predicament. By the time I realized it, probably because we were the only two that could escape, no one was chasing after us.

However, I didn’t have any room to care about that.

While simply holding Ura’s small hand, I became absorbed in running.

However, as expected, Ura can’t easily throw away her comrades.

She tried to stop her legs many times over, and often looks over her shoulder.

“N, no good, father, no way, I don’t want to!” (Ura)

Shit, this is why brats are.....

“Shut up and think about it calmly, you idiot! What meaning is there if you go back! For what reason do you think your comrades and father risked their lives for you! I’ve already said this, but it would all be meaningless if you died! If you go back, you’ll die! And then, everyone will die in vain! Your comrades, Ruuga, and your father as well!” (Velt)

Therefore, she needs to live.

However, Ura was being stubborn.

“Si, silence! What, what would someone like you know! This regret, this frustration, this despair! You’re telling me to live while carrying these things on me? Stop joking! If I’m going to live while carrying suffering on me, I would rather die with pride!” (Ura)

Like I said, stop going on about dying, you damn brat!

“Stop fucking around! You just want to run away because it’s tough being all alone! You’re just unable bear the weight of those guys’ sacrifices! It’s not like I



don't understand those feelings! My old man and mum died to save me as well!" (Velt)

"Eh..... Velt..... you also....." (Ura)

Ahh geez, why do I have to lecture this brat when we're supposed to escape from here as fast as possible.

More like, I can't collect everything I want to say either!

"No..... that's not it, that kind of thing doesn't have any connection right now..... yeah, just, your old man risked his life because he wished for you to live. Therefore, your will of wanting to die has no connection to this, since it's not just your life anymore. So, right now, escaping is....." (Velt)

Yeah, what I want to say, is that we should quickly run so that we don't die.....

"Wait..... eh?" (Velt)

I got caught in the words that I was saying.

Run? Why did I have to run again?

"Run..... why do I need to live a life of just running? Because I accepted Samejima intentions, who risked his life?" (Velt)

"Velt?" (Ura)

"Besides, I need to live. The life that my old man and mum protected..... and, to someday reunite with Kamino..... that's why..... for that reason....." (Velt)

Ura's life isn't light, since it's a life that was protected with an important person as the sacrifice.

I'm the same for that aspect.

My old man and mum protected my life.

That's why, I can't afford to die.

"I can't afford to die. That's why even if I have to abandon my..... fri..... end..... that I finally reunited with....." (Velt)

Exactly because I can't afford to die, I tried to grow.

I tried to become stronger.

Preparing myself, I quit school, determined what I can do, and put in effort for the first time since I was born.

What was it for? It was so that I wouldn't regret a third time.

That's why I even sacrificed my friend's life to live, and in exchange, I would..... protect Ura?

Will I not regret anymore if I do that?

The day my old man and mum were killed, didn't I regret only being able to run away when my old man said to run away?

Is following Samejima's wish to survive by using his life as a sacrifice and caring for his daughter my way of living that will make me not regret?

Think. Samejima's will has no connection to this.

The only thing that decides whether I regret or not is Ura and my will.

"I won't have any regret if I abandon him? There's no way that's true. That doesn't serve as any excuse!" (Velt)

When I realized it, my legs had stopped as well.

"Velt..... what, exactly happened?" (Ura)

"Hmm? Ah..... thinking about it carefully, I wondered why I had to seriously listen to what Samejima was saying." (Velt)

"At a time like this, what are you saying? In the first place, what exactly is this samejima you have been talking about since before?" (Ura)

"As a friend and as a man, I sympathized with his intentions and was willing to do it, but instead of his will, I had forgotten my will." (Velt)

Sorry. Samejima.

You forgot one part about me.

"Ura. As far as I'm concerned, a proud death is idiotic, and I'm not interested in it. But you know....." (Velt)

I'm a delinquent..... in other words, a hopeless idiot.

"If I abandon him like this, every time I see you from now, it's going to be tough. I'll probably regret it." (Velt)

There's only one method that will make me not regret it.

"So, I'm actually going to return." (Velt)

“Haa?” (Ura)

“I’m seriously scared. But as expected, it annoys me! Sending that damn stupid girl flying and escaping with Samejima is the best way to make me not regret it! Aah, I feel refreshed!” (Velt)

That was dangerous. Just a bit more, and I would have regretted it. Returning like this probably has a higher chance of us being killed. But, that’s how this world is right now.

From here on out as well, there’s something wrong with running away by just using the excuse that my life was protected by someone.

At the very least, I don’t want my way of living to be so cowardly.

“Velt..... Velt!” (Ura)

“Ahn?” (Velt)

“In, in that case, two people rather than one person!” (Ura)

Ura clung to my arm while I was trying to return, as if hugging it. At that moment, I saw Ura’s smiling face for the first time. When she smiles, she’s normally cute for her age.

“You, if you return, the one that your old man will scold the most is me, you know?” (Velt)

“It’s okay! At that time, let’s both get scolded! Help father.” (Ura)

“Keh, well, that’s how it is. It’s a child’s privilege to go against their parent.” (Velt)

“Is it because we have no power? Do we escape because that’s everyone’s will? In that case, what about my will! That is how it is. I’ll make that woman be on the point of tears.” (Ura)

I smile as well. I feel like this is our first time opening our hearts to each other.

“In that case, returning naively honestly like this really has is meaningless, so let’s think of a plan while returning.” (Velt)

“A plan, okay, with our coordination, we will knock them out of their wits! The time that father and the others made for us will not go to waste.” (Ura)

Huh? Does this mean that a demon and human is cooperating?  
..... Well, I guess it doesn’t really matter.....

Well, rather than that, the problem is us.  
Even if two ten year old return, there are troops from humanity's great allied forces and the most evil general.  
To be honest, there's no way we can win.  
But.....

“Velt.” (Ura)  
“Ah~?” (Velt)  
“Until just before, you were thinking pessimistically, and had rebellious eyes, but now you are really lively.” (Ura)  
“Fuh. Is that so~? Well, being rebellious is proof that I'm a delinquent after all. Like, the option of disparaging people suits me.” (Velt)  
“How nice. How nice, being an idiot. But, I like the current you better.” (Ura)

Even though we have no chance of winning, rather than fear, I feel my chest getting hotter.  
I couldn't be stopped anymore.

## Chapter 24: I ended up kissing my friend's daughter

*In Japanese, black can mean guilty and white can mean innocent. Thanks for reading~*

—————

Although the demon king's rampage had calmed down, the chaos in the place had still not calmed down.

"It's dangerous, so decapitate the demon king right now!"

"Wa, wait, usually, we should have a public execution. It can serve as a restraint to the remains of the seven great demon kings."

"That's true. Besides, he still has utility value after all."

"How easy going. If we let him live, it would be too late by the time something happens, you know?"

Their opinions are dividing.

Should they cut off his head right now and raise shouts of victory?

Or, should they perform judgement at the proper location?

Either way, it was convenient for us.

"Gyanza-sama! Please give us your opinion."

However, Gyanza isn't saying anything.

Dumbfounded, she's just looking at the immobile demon king and her broken sabre, with an expression that doesn't show what she's thinking.

Is she depressed about how she was just about to lose?

Nevertheless, it's wasted effort to think about this woman's thoughts anyways.

Therefore,

"Uraah!" (Velt)

I decided to not think.

"G-, Gya, Gyanza-sama!"

No one was on the lookout.

Thinking that the battle was over, they had probably relaxed. How ill-prepared.

Aiming for the dumbfounded Gyanza, I threw my baton towards the back of her head with a spin on it.

Well, I guess there's no way it would just hit that conveniently.

"Wha-, tch-! Are there reinforcements?"

Probably by sensing the slight presence, she easily evaded it.

Well, I didn't think it would hit, but now the whole humanity great allied forces in this place have noticed me.

"Wha, what is that youngster!"

"It, it's not a demon! He's a human child."

"Sonny, what are you doing in a place like this. No, do you understand what an outrageous thing you did right now!"

A human child appeared.

Why in this sort of place? On the contrary, he attacked the general.

Just as I expected, they are making a commotion. Well, the killing intent from some of them is super scary.

However, it's something I had readied myself for.

For the trembling of my legs and the pounding sound of my heart to go unnoticed, I simply shouted as a show of courage.

"My name is Velt Jeeha! All of you assholes better separate from that demon king! I'm the one that's going to bring him back!" (Velt)

Don't make that blank face. Well, I expected it though.

However, it was beyond my expectations for this woman to be the very first one to react.

"Bring the demon king back? Boy, could you tell this onee-san about what you're thinking?" (Gyanza)

Gyanza is entirely making it seem like she's a gentle young lady that doesn't care about a child's pranks, but she's still scary.

Behind her smiling face, she's overflowing with black miasma.

I'm losing my nerve. However, it's my loss if that happens.

"That guy's my friend. So, even if I have to pick a fight with you assholes, I chose to help my friend." (Velt)

“Friend? Boy, what are you talking about? A human child like you is the scary, scary demon king’s friend? Lies aren’t good.” (Gyanza)

“Hmm, but you don’t really care whether it’s a lie or not, right? After all, your bad eyes and regretful brain turn all inconvenient facts black, even if they’re white.” (Velt)

Oh, her smile twitched a bit. Did it go to her head?  
She easily reacted to a cheeky, damn brat’s insults.

“That brat, what rude things.....”  
“You’re going to be killed, you know?”  
“More like, saying you’re the demon king’s friend..... since you’re a child, if you’re going to tell a lie, say something like you’re the hero or something.”

No, being a hero would be impossible. But I guess now I’ve become unable to escape.

“Uu..... tsu..... guh, A, Asa, kura?” (Sharkryu)

At that moment, Sharkryu moves while on the verge of death, and the second he looks at me with his eyes that look like they’re going to close at any time, the demon king unintentionally raises his voice.

“Wait, A, Asaku-, you idiot! Yo-, you, why are you here! Why didn’t you escape!” (Sharkryu)

The demon king regains his awareness and shouts.  
Obviously, humanity’s great allied forces took a stance with their weapons at once.

However, apart from the soldiers that wanted to give the demon king the finishing blow, the other soldiers stopped them, as they became curious about the demon king’s strange behaviour and my exchange with him.

“Yo, are you alive, demon king-sama? It seems you haven’t gone through your second reincarnation yet.” (Velt)

“Guh, id, idiot, why do you think I risked everyone’s lives for! It was because I wanted you and Ura to live.....” (Sharkryu)

“Yeah, don’t worry, since Ura escaped a long time ago. I returned here after confirming that.” (Velt)

Well, that's a lie though.

While I'm gathering attention, Ura slipped into this large hollow in the confusion, and is hiding, waiting for a chance.

"T-, that's not it! Why didn't you escape as well! What I asked for, is for you to let Ura escape, and then protect her from now on for me!" (Sharkryu)

"Like I said, why would I have to do something like that. I didn't accept it even once, you know?" (Velt)

"A, Asakura..... yo-, you!" (Sharkryu)

Ooh, he's seriously glaring at me. As I thought, he's angry.

"O, oi, what is this exchange?"

"Hasn't the demon king's personality changed?"

"Ra, rather than that, since some time ago, that youngster has been quite intimate with the demon king..... was it true that he's his friend?"

"Who the hell is he, this youngster!"

The dreadful demon king is a threat to humanity, and is also their old enemy. That kind of existence is casually talking with a human child. Would anyone be able to comprehend this scene? No one could.

"Boy, who are you? Why are you that close with the demon king?" (Gyanza)

Gyanza's smile disappeared. Her way of speaking sounds like she's pressing a question to a criminal.

Well, I understand why it would be on her mind, but she probably won't believe me even if I tell her.

"Who knows. Since you know everything, can't you just think about it yourself? Something like, I got tricked by the demon king, or although my appearance is human, I'm actually a demon, or that I'm humanity's betrayer, anything's fine. Feel free to stick any label you like on me. Since labels are unavoidable for delinquents, I'm used to it." (Velt)

"Wha..... t, foolish things are you" (Gyanza)

"That's right. Like humans, demi-humans, or demons, it seems there are various races in this world, but even among them, I'm a delinquent, the most foolish and stupid race. Remember that!" (Velt)

I'm different from the day the demi-human appeared, when I lost myself and



attacked it.

A life abrading fight that I experienced for the first time in my life.

I resolved myself with words and feelings, but in the end, it doesn't change the fact that I'm scared.

With just a slight mistake, I could easily be killed.

But even so, I have to do it.

“Ura..... I'll definitely make this guy show a weak spot..... so when I give the signal, I'm counting on you.” (Velt)

While confirming my objective with a small murmur, I face forwards.  
If I feel fear from dying, think like this:

I've already died.

“Here I come, uooooooooooooo!” (Velt)

I run. The movements of a ten year old. The speed of a ten year old. The power of a ten year old.

Look carefully. Although I'm heading towards you, be amazed enough to hesitate killing me!

“Stop that, sonny!”

“Geez, I wonder where you came in from.”

“Behave yourself!”

As if obstructing my path, the soldiers try to gently stop and make me calm down without any hostility.

A wall was made in the middle of my path to Gyanza. However, that was within my expectations!

“You won't be able to stop me with that kind of wall!” (Velt)

I jumped.

It wasn't the jump power of a ten year old child.

I easily jumped over the adult height, and ran passed them as if walking on air.

“Wha-, he he he he he, he flew!”

“What, what amazing jump power this brat has!”

“He isn't an ordinary person, he must have been acting!”

Of course, I can't jump over a crowd of people with my normal jump power. Then, how did I pass them? The answer is simple.

"Was that flight (fly)? No, flight (fly) is a high grade spell. A child shouldn't be able to do it. Besides, he didn't chant either....."

Incidentally, flight (fly) is apparently an ultra high grade magic that enables you to freely fly about in the air, but I haven't used that sort of magic. That is because I can only use one magic.

Only floating (levitation).

I casted levitation on my own shoes, and just floated myself while advancing forward.

These guys just misunderstood of their own accord.

"Here I come!" (Velt)

Heading diagonally down, I threw my other baton at Gyanza. From the front, without any tricks. Well, there's no way this would hit.

"H, how foolish! To simply throw away your weapon like that....." (Gyanza)

My baton that was simply evaded hits the ground. However, in that moment, it makes a violent sound and breaks the ground.

"Eh....." (Gyanza)

Gyanza's expression, and all of humanity's great allied forces expressions hardened while doubting their eyes. It's because a normal stick that a child threw had enough destructive power, that let alone sinking into the ground, it smashed it.

"Wha, what is that power! I-, if it hit, it would have been terrible!"  
"How did you do that? Are there any mechanisms in that weapon or something?"

That's right, I'm actually an amazing guy you know? Is what I hope they're thinking.

"Here I come, Gyanza!" (Velt)

After jumping over the wall of soldiers, I ran unarmed, in a straight line to

Gyanza.

With this, there isn't anyone that can stop us.

Now, what will you do?

"It can't be helped." (Gyanza)

Since her weapon was broken from the battle just before, Gyanza is currently unarmed as well.

And, since there is some space between us, there's nothing we can use but magic to repulse the enemy heading towards us.

I was waiting for the moment Gyanza tries to release magic at me.

"The flame's" (Gyanza)

"Hit!" (Velt)

"Bullet, gah!! Wha-?" (Gyanza)

The moment Gyanza tries to use magic, I release the trick I prepared. At that moment, with her talented reactions and intuition, Gyanza cancelled her magic and jumped away from that place.

It would have hit if she was a bit later in jumping away. All of a sudden, something fell from just above her, and made a loud noise as it pierced the ground.

That was the very first baton I threw.

"Wh, why was this weapon just above me!" (Gyanza)

"As expected of you! You can evade this as well, huh!" (Velt)

It's reasonable for her to be surprised. After Gyanza evaded the baton I first threw, while everyone had their attention on me from my entry and my exchange with Samejima, I floated it with floating (levitation) and left it on standby at the ceiling, right above Gyanza. It was so that it would fall towards Gyanza after I release floating (levitation) at the right timing.

As long as it's within a certain distance, I can float things I've touched once with floating (levitation). I realised it from carrying plates over and over with floating (levitation) during my training at the ramen restaurant.

This is my only way of fighting with magic that I came up with.

“There!” (Velt)

“!” (Gyanza)

And then, I hurled the shoe I was wearing towards Gyanza while she was slightly agitated.

Unlike a weapon, it’s slow.

I did this a lot in fights when I was Asakura Ryuuma too.

Throwing what you’re wearing to the opponent, and then attack them the moment they touch it.

To be frank, there wouldn’t be any damage even if I hurl a shoe. The important part is for them to turn their attention elsewhere.

However, apart from that, throwing your shoe and attacking the opponent in this world is impossible for those overly serious knight-samas.

Therefore, it would be a steal if there’s even one “?” in Gyanza’s thoughts.

During that slight time, I floated the baton I dropped before with floating (levitation) and succeeded at returning it back to my hand.

This made Gyanza and the others open their eyes widely as well.

“The weapon returned to his hand of its own accord.....”

Floating (levitation).

The people in this world only use this when they need to carry heavy things.

Exactly because it’s a spell that anyone can use, they don’t try to pursue it that deeply.

However, I believe that mastering this magic will surely let me become the strongest.

I return the weapon to my hand. If I spoil the trick, I’m sure everyone here would be able to use it if they try.

However, on top of not trying it, the fact that no one thinks about it is proof that they don’t recognize floating (levitation) as a magic that can be used in a fight.

If you were to compare it to something, floating (levitation) is a pushcar used to carry heavy things.

No one would think of using a pushcar as a weapon in a fight.

This is why no one realizes it.  
Furthermore, there isn't anyone in this world that would think of working hard to master using a pushcar, when fascinating magic like lightning or fire exists.  
Except for me.....

“There! Pass!” (Velt)  
“Eh.....” (Gyanza)

Even if I throw a baton again, it would be reflexively dodged.  
However, humans are mysterious things.  
Despite reflexively evading things that were vigorously thrown, for some reason, they end up normally receiving it if it's thrown slowly like a pass.

Gyanza is a human as well. Without understanding what's happening, she caught that baton I passed to her.

And so, Gyanza fell in my trap.

“H, he, heav, wha! What weight!” (Gyanza)

The moment she caught the baton, Gyanza's back suddenly bended, and she collapsed onto her hands on the ground.  
Surprised, right? The fact that the baton I was lightly swinging around is actually unreasonably heavy.

“Hah hah hah ha! As I thought, women have thin arms! Oi Gyanza-chan, you really have no power!” (Velt)

I'll say my thanks to the old man at the weapons shop when I return.

From how it felt, the baton's normal weight was around five hundred grams.  
However, with the cooperation of the old man at the weapon shop, we remodelled it to be heavier by a hundredfold.  
I was thinking about it ever since I heard that old man was one of the rare gravity magicians in this world.  
In other words, unlike its appearance, each of my weapons are around fifty kilograms. In total, it's a hundred kilograms.

This is for the sake of making up for my light body and power that I felt when I fought the demi-human.

And, my means of holding these fifty kilogram batons is the floating (levitation) magic.

So, although I'm always carrying the batons around in a holster, I'm actually carrying them with floating (levitation).

The batons slightly float in the holster.

By piling up investigations of how much mana consumption I can reduce while increasing my proficiency and accuracy of floating magic during my manual labour at the ramen restaurant, I can now live while constantly using floating (levitation) for a certain amount of time in one day.

“Remember this! This is my strategy, 『Fuwa fuwa time』!” (Velt) (TL Note: Fuwafuwa – fluffy.)

This is what I gained from deciding to not learn any magic other than floating (levitation).

“I'll smash your head! Axe kick!” (Velt)

In that slight opening, I was able to shorten the distance between Gyanza and I.

At this range, she shouldn't have any leisure to use magic.

She doesn't have a weapon either.

In a panic, Gyanza releases the baton and stops my axe kick just before it hits by guarding with both her hands.

However,

“Wha, ou, ch, wha, what power! A kick like this with a child's body weight?” (Gyanza)

It was unwise of her to guard with bare hands.

Because my kicks make up some of my attacks, I asked the old man from the weapon shop to make my shoes heavy as well.

I constantly walk while using floating (levitation) on my shoes, and I use techniques like the axe kick where I bring my foot down from above by releasing floating (levitation) the moment I raise it.

All that's left is to get the weight and my speed together, so that I can perfect an axe kick that has power manyfold than normal.

It's simple if the trick is exposed. However, Gyanza will probably

misunderstand like this.

“You, are you a gravity magician!” (Gyanza)

She misunderstood it just like I thought she would.

Well, go ahead and think that way if you want to. I’m actually a low grade magician, but I’ll stay silent.

But with this, my role has ended.

Agitation and disorder from all factors.

Furthermore, she lost her weapon, didn’t get th chance to use magic, and above all else, both her hands are sealed.

“I’ll leave the rest to you!” (Velt)

At that moment, a silver haired girl came in between Gyanza and I. Since everyone was concentrated on our offense and defense, her existence at this place was completely unexpected.

“Yeah, this is great Velt. I’ll give you a kiss later as a reward!” (Ura)

It’s Ura.

“Prin, cess U..... ra.....?” (Gyanza)

From Ura’s unexpected entry, Gyanza’s whole body stiffened. She’s full of weak spots.

Now I just need to leave it to the demon king’s daughter, a brat that was said to be a potential threat to the world someday.

“Take this, Gyanza! Makyokushin Karate, Demon High Kick!” (Ura)

What she was aiming for, is Gyanza’s completely defenseless chin. Even an amateur knows about it. If you jolt the brain, it can cause a concussion and the like to the opponent. That’s the same for Gyanza. Ura’s paternal high kick that was full of destructive power smashed Gyanza’s chin in an instant, and like a puppet that had its strings cut, Gyanza collapsed onto the ground immediately.

“Ah..... kaha..... ah,.....” (Gyanza)

The focus of her eyes couldn't focus, and while not understanding what just happened to her, Gyanza was unable to stand up.

Everyone was at a loss for words from this scene, and Ura and my hearts were about to explode from agitation while looking down at the collapsed Gyanza.

“Haa, haa, haa, haa, haa, haa, it..... it went,..... well.....” (Velt)

“Ye, yeah, with my..... power and your power..... that Gyanza was.....” (Ura)

“A, are you serious, cr, crap, I feel like I'm about to fall over....., I, I'm starting to shake now.” (Velt)

“Yeah. I, I'm scared as well.” (Ura)

I couldn't believe it.

It was a strategy that was close to a gamble, but we succeeded at everything without a single mistake.

Gradually, not only agitation, but fear once again filled my heart. What would have happened if we failed?

“Li, like, it, it went way, to, too well..... this, this isn't a dream right?” (Velt)

It's pathetic, but everything that made me tensed was cut off, and my heart couldn't settle down at all.

That was the same for Ura as well.

When I grasped Ura's hand as a test, she was shaking as much as I was.

I was scared.

But, we overcame it.

We won.

And, that wasn't a dream..... wait, it really isn't a dream right?

“Velt..... um, that is, um” (Ura)

“What's up?” (Velt)

“Um, it's that..... you were cool! Nn.” (Ura)

“Ah? Chu..... eh?” (Velt)

Eh? For some reason, Ura blushed and restlessly mumbled something.

“Nn~~” (Ura)

Huh? Like, when I realized it..... Ura pressed her lips against my lips.....



“Puha-! ..... Eh, ehehe, as I thought..... it’s not a dream!” (Ura)

“..... Yo..... you.....” (Velt)

“It’s because..... it was a promise!” (Ura)

“N, no, just because of that don’t suddenly! Like, at least do it on my cheek!

Even though you’re just a brat!” (Velt)

“Muu, isn’t it fine! The kiss is my reward to you. Kissing you on the lips is a reward from me after all!” (Ura)

I ended up getting kissed by the demon king’s daughter, and my head was in too much confusion.

..... Wait, it’s good we won, but after this, how are we going to pass through the wall of humanity’s great allied forces that are surrounding us?

However, despite having something more concerning than that, we hadn’t noticed.

We won against Gyanza. We were convinced of that.

But, we still hadn’t noticed that all we did was step on the lion’s tail.

## Chapter 25: The predatory female general

Now I just need to run. I can bluff my way through or appeal to their emotions, but either way, it doesn't matter because I defeated Gyanza, the perpetrator who made the situation complicated.

"I, I cannot believe it. To think that with one hit, Gyanza-sama was..... by a child like that."

"He seems quite close with the demon king and the demon king's daughter, but who the hell is he!?"

There doesn't seem to be a 'let's immediately kill the dangerous person who defeated Gyanza' atmosphere, so this is my chance.

"Oi, Ura!" (Velt)

"Yeah, I know. I'll going to make a distraction with my magic now, so let's make this place fall into further chaos and escape while carrying father." (Ura)

It was the exact moment after we confirmed our plan to escape this place and started moving.

"So..... so that's what's going on." (Gyanza)

This feeling..... it's the overwhelming atmosphere of death that I felt when I first saw Gyanza.

Goosebumps appeared simultaneously all over my body.

"Wha! You, you!" (Velt)

"No way! To, to be able to stand up after taking my high kick....." (Ura)

A bruise on her chin. Red blood is oozing out of her cut lip. She felt plenty of pain, and her lower body is trembling.

"I understand now. So that's what's going on." (Gyanza)

However, Gyanza stood.

She brought about an ominous atmosphere, and without minding caring a single bit about the damage or the injuries she took, she simply showed tears

and a smiling face.

I felt the chills from the bottom of my heart.

While looking at me, Gyanza was crying.

“Boy, you are so pitiful. Your pure heart was stolen by the filthy demons and were manipulated, right?” (Gyanza)

“Ha?” (Velt)

“I looked down on you because I thought you were a child, princess Ura. You used a pure, human child that was living peacefully without any sins..... how could you do that.” (Gyanza)

Although she’s extremely missing the point, this woman is seriously saying that.

“It started again, this woman! I’m being manipulated? I didn’t see that coming.” (Velt)

“I am manipulating Velt? Correct yourself! That is an insult towards Velt!” (Ura)

“Ah~, just don’t even bother anymore, Ura. I’ve slightly understood this woman. Even if you try to have a proper conversation with her, it’ll just give you stress.” (Velt)

“However! However, Velt, this woman is, this woman is!” (Ura)

“Like I said, don’t worry about it.” (Velt)

Exactly, if you worry about it, you lose. I stroke Ura’s angry head and calm her down.

“As long as we we know what we each think, it’s fine.” (Velt)

“Velt.....” (Ura)

“At the very least, my will is with you. Your old man, and your feelings towards Ruuga won’t change.” (Velt)

“! Velt..... yeah! I also..... although we only just met today..... even if you’re a human, even though you’re a human, I love you!” (Ura)

“Oh~, hmm is that so, wow I’m so happy~.” (Velt) (TL Note: Sarcasm intensifies)

Well, leaving that aside, what should we do with the woman in front of us. The same tactic probably wouldn’t work twice after all———

“Ahh, how pitiful!” (Gyanza)

“Wha.....” (Velt)

“Fa, fast!” (Ura)

By the time I realized it, Gyanza was already before our eyes.  
Before my thoughts settled, she came.

“Kuh, Makyokushin Kara———” (Ura)  
“Ahh, I will not forgive you, princess Ura.” (Gyanza)  
“Ah.....” (Ura)

Gyanza quickly draws a cross with her finger.  
Then, a shining cross captures Ura’s body, and when I thought the light burst open, Ura’s whole body was bound by the cross that suddenly appeared, which was coiled with innumerable thorns.

“Divine Magic, Cross Executioner (Cross beheading).” (Gyanza)  
“Wha, my, my body is, move———” (Ura)  
“Princess Ura. For you who has hidden genuine evil inside of you, I will hand down god’s divine punishment.” (Gyanza)  
“Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaah!!” (Ura)

The moment Ura’s body, that had been crucified, was wrapped in divine light, her scream resounded.

“Ura! Thi, this crazy woman! Release Ura!” (Velt)  
I need to save her immediately or else.  
I don’t know what’s happening to Ura’s body, but whatever it is, it obviously brings her pain.  
Without a single plan, I wield the batons with all my power.  
However,

“Boy, it must have been scary.....” (Gyanza)  
By the time I realized it, I was being hugged tightly by Gyanza.  
While a mere ten year old child, Ura, is screaming, how can this woman show such a kindness filled smile?  
I wasn’t able to move at all.

“A, Asakura! Ura! Yo, youuuuuu! Gyanza!” (Sharkryu)  
Raising his injured body, Samejima shouts.

However,

“Divine Magic, God Flame!” (Gyanza)

“D, da, damn it!” (Sharkryu)

“God’s flames have profound compassion and will absolutely never destroy its target. However, in the same way, that hell fire will never disappear either.”

(Gyanza)

“Guooooooooo” (Sharkryu)

“Be embraced by flames for eternity and reflect on your own sins, demon king.”

(Gyanza)

Flames that never disappear and flames that completely burn the opponent. However, these flames are only for the sake of giving the opponent the pain of the scorching heat.

There should be a limit to being merciless.

“S, Sa, Samejima! Thi, this crazy woman, release him! Release him!” (Velt)

“It’s all okay now, boy.” (Gyanza)

It’s useless. Even if I try to escape through brute force, she’s holding me so tightly that my body is wedged into her arms.

I can’t move at all.

“It, it came, that, that was, Gyanza-sama’s magic of divine punishment.”

“Only the people that have mastered the light attribute can reach it, the divine attribute.”

“Oi, it would be better to back off more. Merciless divine punishments equally judge enemies and allies. If we get dragged into it, we’ll die as well.”

My thinking was too naive. No, I should have given her a finishing blow. However, a situation that further added to my despair happened.

“Nn.” (Gyanza)

“———!” (Velt)

What is happening to my body?

From her kindness filled smile, she showed a lascivious smile and suddenly grabbed my head...

“Nn, nn—! Nn—! Nn—! Puha-, guh, wha, what the hell did you, nn—! Nn—!”

(Velt)

A kiss? No. It was a more evil thing.

“A, Asakura—————” (Sharkryu)

“Ve, Velt, guuuuu, aaaaaaaah, kuh, yo, you bastard, wha, what are you, doing to, Velt!” (Ura)

Disgusting. I feel like vomiting. My consciousness is becoming distant.  
Right now, what is happening to me?

“Puha-, fuu, don’t worry about it, boy. Onee-san will definitely help you.”  
(Gyanza)

No words came out.  
My body cramped, and my head was unable to think of anything.  
Just, I know that something abnormal is happening.  
The faces of Gyanza’s allies, humanity’s great allied forces, are turning pale as well.

“Gen, general Gyanza, what, what exactly are you.”

One soldier asks her.  
Then, Gyanza responded with a cornered looking face. (TL Note: Not too sure if this really means ‘cornered face’, but google-sensei told me it was... 切羽詰ったような表情)

“This boy had his pure heart stolen by the demons and his mind is being manipulated.” (Gyanza)

“Ye, yes, and, so, um, what relation does that have to you ki, kissing him?”  
“It is to prepare for the ritual that is necessary for regaining that pure heart.”  
(Gyanza)

Ritual? Preparation? What the hell is this woman going to do to me?

“The most effective method of regaining someone’s pureness, is to let them take someone’s chastity.” (Gyanza)

—————!

“Because I kept repeating half hearted battles against the demons, this child was dragged into it. Therefore, I need to help this child no matter what. Even if I

have to sacrifice my chastity.” (Gyanza)

..... Wait, this woman!

“Y, you asshole, no way!” (Velt)

“Boy, please stay still. It is onee-san’s first time as well, but I will definitely make it succeed.” (Gyanza)

The worst scene came to my mind, and my consciousness awakened in an instant.

“Y, you!” (Velt)

“It’s okay. You don’t have to worry, since you can live a normal life from tomorrow. An, please don’t struggle so much. Please hold a strong heart. You can do it.” (Gyanza)

“Stop it! Don’t, don’t fuck with me! Why, even though I’m telling you to stop! Re, release me! Let go! I’ll beat you to death!” (Velt)

“Ahh, to think the demons’ brainwashing went this far.” (Gyanza)

“Don’t go touching me!” (Velt)

“It’s okay, by becoming one with me, you can regain your pure heart.” (Gyanza)

No one is stopping her. No, it’s just that no one can get involved with this abnormal situation.

I struggled. I probably struggled the most since I was born. I twisted my body, resisted, and tried to escape no matter what.

“Boy, please don’t struggle. You have to regain your former pureness. You have the right to forget the tough days of being manipulated by the demons and become happy.” (Gyanza)

“Aaaaaah! Shit, you asshole, I’ll beat you to death! Absolutely kill you! Let go! Let go! Let go!” (Velt)

“Boy, live a happy life.” (Gyanza)

“!!!!” (Velt)

“I will take responsibility as well. Once everything ends, live with this onee-san. A lovely future is waiting for us.” (Gyanza)

She’s going to rape me!

A woman’s advances? Don’t be stupid. Would that give me the feelings of fear, hatred, disgrace, chills, despair and defeat?

This woman is mad. With the intention of doing the correct things with a normal mind, she is taking such mad actions without hesitation.  
A deep, strange “something” that I can’t even imagine, is in this woman.

“Stop..... it.....” (Velt)

“Now, let’s become one, boy.” (Gyanza)

I’m about to be raped until exhaustion..... is what I thought.  
That’s why, I resisted one last time.

“This guy..... is my friend.” (Velt)

“.....” (Gyanza)

“No matter how many times you do me, that won’t change.” (Velt)

I told her that. I said what I wanted to say.  
Then, in that moment.

“Astral Vortex.”

Gyanza’s bewitching smile changed to an expression of anger in that instant.  
In the next moment, Gyanza jumped away from me.  
Then, right above my pushed down body, a shining spiral swirl passed through.

“Wha?” (Velt)

Someone attacked Gyanza.  
Who is it? Ura and Samejima are still captured.  
In that case, who is it?

“Who is it! The rude person that interrupted this divine ritual!” (Gyanza)

Gyanza’s anger. Then, from behind me, I heard a voice I had become accustomed to hearing.

“The rude person is you, you damn girl.”

That was a very vulgar, rough, and overbearing tone,

“In this damn gloomy place deep underground, you..... ”

But, reliable.....

“What the fuck were you doing to my stupid younger brother.”

As an ally, no one is more reliable than him, my self-proclaimed future



brother in law.

“Fa..... Farugaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!” (Velt)

Clad in an overwhelming presence and aura, Faruga appeared before me.

“O, oi, just now, what did that brat say?”

“Fa, Faruga? That guy is the real Fa, Faruga?”

“Wha, what! Tha, that is! That person is, the strongest hunter in the continent!  
The scarlet dragon slayer (dragon killer), Faruga Elfarshia!”

It’s understandable for humanity’s great allied forces to be surprised.  
Even I’m surprised after all.

But, I’m glad. It wasn’t a dream.

I feel relieved from the bottom of my heart, enough to make me not feel  
pitiful.

## Chapter 26: One conclusion

To go through with my selfishness, I need enough power.  
I was weak and powerless. That's why my resistance was easily held down by power.

However, although I'm frustrated, this guy is different.  
He is a man that can go through with his selfishness.  
That's exactly why I think he's reliable.

"Yo, my stupid younger brother. Is your damn virginity safe?" (Faruga)

Certainly, it was just on the verge of being taken, but there should be a proper way of asking that.

Well, I can't say anymore considering I was saved by him.

"Yeah, somehow. So, Faruga, why are you here?" (Velt)

"I sensed the demon king's wave. When I was chasing after that overwhelming wave, I discovered a cave and a tunnel in the forest. And now this weird as fuck development is happening." (Faruga) (TL Note: A better translation for 波動?)

The demon king's wave? I see, so the power that Samejima released with his big outrage at the risk of his life was perceived by Faruga.

Him risking his life in a big outrage wasn't pointless.

"Well then, leaving this damn situation aside for later, I guess I'll start with this eyesore first." (Faruga)

Faruga faces forward, and pushes out his spear.  
Gyanza and humanity's great allied forces reflexively put themselves on guard.

"Get out of my sight you shitty girl. You aren't so idiotic to not understand how well you'll do against fighting me, right?" (Faruga)

"Fufu,『Scarlet Dragon Slayer Faruga』-sama. Although you continued declining our invites to join us no matter how special the conditions were, what sort of intention do you have here?" (Gyanza)

"Nothing's going on. I'm not interested in any of you assholes. But, I decided

that I would kill people who pick a fight with this country and my stupid brother in an even more gruesome way than a dragon.” (Faruga)

The atmosphere is painful.

“This, is this boy your younger brother?” (Gyanza)

“To be exact, he’s my『Future』one.”

Towards Faruga who is glaring at her, Gyanza isn’t smiling either.  
And then, the one that moved first was Faruga.

“Fuh.” (Faruga)

“!” (Gyanza)

A moment of offence and defence... seemed to happen.  
At the very least, I couldn’t see anything.  
Neither of them have moved a single step, but with the two as the centre, a crack ran across the ground in a circle shape.

“..... As expected of you..... you thrust six times in that one instant. And to think you would break my divine punishment magic..... the rumours were true huh.” (Gyanza)

And then, in the next moment,

“Uu, ah, I, I.....” (Ura)

“Nu-, the flame.....” (Sharkryu)

“Ura! Samejima!” (Velt)

The cross that had captured Ura broke, and the flame that was covering Samejima went out.

They were both tortured intensely, but they are still alive.

But, how did that happen? Was it Faruga?

“Stupid younger brother. I don’t know why you’re fighting together with those damn demons, but are you satisfied with this?” (Faruga)

“There is something I have heard before. The scarlet dragon slayer’s spear does not stab, but it breaks. As well as demon and demi-humans, it even breaks the effects of magic and abilities.” (Gyanza)

“Oi, you’re too loud you shitty girl. I’m talking with my stupid younger brother. Well, seeing you defend against four of my spear thrusts without a weapon

shows that you don't seem to be that weak." (Faruga)

Haha..... what is this..... well, I understand it well now.  
These guys are on a way too different level.

"At any rate, you have done quite a troublesome thing. That boy over there lost his innocent heart. To regain that heart, I am going to sacrifice my chastity to him. What part of that is a mistake?" (Gyanza)

"I can't even get the motivation to argue. Well, if that treatment method really is correct, then my foolish younger sister can do it." (Faruga)

"Besides, we are talking about the demon king and princess Ura here. Even if you are the prince of the Elfarshia Kingdom, interfering with humanity's great allied force's great causes will not be forgiven, you know?" (Gyanza)

"Like I said, why? Your great cause and my stupid younger brother. You don't even need to think about which one I would choose." (Faruga)

An explosive situation. Which one of them is going to move first?  
However, no matter who moves first, everyone here had their breath taken away while thinking the same thing.  
One of them will definitely end up in an extreme condition.

However,

"That may be so, but this is obviously in the Elfarshia Kingdom's territory."  
(??)

"!" (Velt)

"Both parties, I will have you leave your weapons to let me save face here." (??)

Here, I heard another voice I became accustomed to hearing.  
The moment I heard that voice, I became happy enough for tears to come out.

"Even if you are humanity's great allied forces, you shouldn't be able to advance into my country's territory without permission from my country. I will have you leave from this place immediately." (??)

When that man appeared, the cave shook.

"Tyler!" (Velt)

There's no mistake. It's Tyler.  
Tyler, and the Elfarshia Kingdom army gathered in the tunnel's hole one after

the other.

“O, oi oi oi! Di, did he just say, Tyler!?”

“There’s no doubt about it! That man is general Tyler!”

“That person is『Paladin (holy knight) General Tyler』, you’re lying right?”

“Are you seriously saying that one of the six Paladins that stand at the top of humanity’s continent suddenly appeared.”

“Furthermore, even the Elfarshia Kingdom army is here.”

O, ohh.

Well, I knew that Tyler was super famous as well, but that’s an unexpected reaction.

I was talking to him quite frankly like he’s the neighbourhood uncle, or as a classmate’s old man, but he really was an amazing guy huh.

“Fufu, well well, general Tyler. It has been a long time.” (Gyanza)

“It seems you’ve been promoted quite a lot, Gyanza. No, right now you’re a general, right? We haven’t met ever since I was invited to be a lecturer at the great national military academy.” (Tyler)

“Yes, although I still have not accumulated as much military prowess as you have.” (Gyanza)

“No no, you will surely become a great hero that far surpasses me in a few years.” (Tyler)

From one glance, I can see that Gyanza’s way of interacting with Tyler is different.

Rather, they were acquaintances huh.

“Oi, you damn Tyler, did you also sense the demon king’s wave? You arrived quite late though.” (Faruga)

“Well well, prince Faruga. You were quite early. Well, unlike you, I cannot take independent action after all.” (Tyler)

“Keh. In the first place, if you assholes that were in the country all the time found this tunnel quickly, this damn development wouldn’t have..... that incident wouldn’t have happened either.” (Faruga)

That incident. Hearing that, Tyler’s expression slightly clouded.

And, I also understood the meaning. That incident, is the incident when old man

and mum were killed.

“Yes, of course I understand that. For that reason, I will never go through such regret again.” (Tyler)

He didn't have his usual, kind fatherly smiling expression.  
The current Tyler is,

“Gyanza. Although that child is a commoner, he is a treasure that we definitely cannot let break, and is our country's son. He seems to have caused much rudeness towards you, but I want you to overlook it. We will send a messenger to properly apologize with some goods as an apology afterwards.” (Tyler)

Making me feel great just by being here.

“Please, I want you to come to an agreement with that. Furthermore, we will take care of the demon king and the princess.” (Tyler)

“General Tyler. Do you think I will consent to that?” (Gyanza)

“Even I can see it. The demon king can't be saved. The achievements will all go to you, and we are the witnesses of that.” (Tyler)

“What about princess Ura?” (Gyanza)

“Our country will take responsibility for her future course. We definitely will not trouble you.” (Tyler)

That was different to Faruga, Sharkryu and Ruuga who simply kill.  
It was also different to Gyanza, that is abnormally impossible to understand.

“If you say even that is not enough, there would be no choice. If you say you want me to hand over this child and the demon king's family no matter what, we will have to fight for our son, and the people that our son is trying to protect.” (Tyler)

However, I felt something big wrapping me, and this battlefield itself.

“Don, don't fuck with us, there's only meaning to it if he gets beheaded!”  
“By exposing the heads of the demon king and his family, by letting out a shout of victory for humanity, it will become hope for us and a restraint for the demons!”

“While being a member of humanity's great allied forces, does the Elfarshia

Kingdom have the intention of turning against us!”

“This will become a war you know!”

War? No way. Because I tried to help Ura and Samejima of my own accord, why.....

“It just means that Velt-kun is that much of an important existence to us.”  
(Galva)

“As royalty, we can’t let the country become dragged into war because of our personal feelings. Therefore, when the time comes, I am prepared to throw away my royalty status.” (Forna)

I hadn’t deeply thought about this incident.  
Saving my friend’s daughter. That was all it was.  
Even if something happened, I thought everything would only be my own problem.

“Wai, I..... I really am an idiot.” (Velt)

I was shallow.  
I was naive.  
I didn’t think my stupid actions would tie in with a war.

However, this is what it means to not think far enough.

“Galva..... Forna..... even you guys.” (Velt)

Even you guys came for me?

“Tha, that person is the man that is famed for being unrivaled in physical strength,『Galva of the Giant Killing』!”

“And, that girl is that lady!”

“Elfarshia Kingdom’s princess, Forna Elfarshia-sama! The child prodigy called the『Konjiki (golden) Comet, Forna』!”

“Wh, why, why are they here! E-, Elfarshia Kingdom’s strongest forces are all gathered together!”

Why do these guys become all serious for me, even while understanding that I invite all kinds of situations with my stupid actions that I don’t think through enough!

“V, Ve, Velt.” (Ura)

“Ura, are you safe?” (Velt)

“Yeah, bu, but, these humans are.....” (Ura)

It’s understandable for Ura to doubt her eyes. Even I’m surprised.

“Ku, hahahaha.” (Sharkryu)

“Samejima! You, you were still alive!” (Velt)

“You’re too loud, and I’m not going to die yet. But, hahahaha.” (Sharkryu)

“Father! Please hang on, father! Thi, this is.....” (Ura)

“It’s fine, Ura. I already know it myself. Hahaha, but to think you would show me a scene like this at the very end. Asakura, you really are an amazing guy.” (Sharkryu)

While getting up his dying body, Samejima strangely laughs.

Ura, who ran up to him, lost her words after seeing his body.

However, as if somewhat satisfied, Samejima himself was showing a smile that looked like he could disappear anytime now.

For Samejima who was fighting against the world, he knew how amazing this scene is.

“Fuu..... very well.” (Gyanza)

At that moment, Gyanza murmured as if feeling resignation.

“General Tyler. If you are going to say that much, I will give up on his head. However, if princess Ura becomes an existence that harms humanity from now on, we will definitely not forgive the Elfarshia Kingdom.” (Gyanza)

“I am indebted to you.” (Tyler)

“Inform the whole army! It is our victory in this war! Report this notification to the empire and the head office at once! While treating the injured, we will return! The battle has ended!” (Gyanza)

The general’s shout of victory that announces the end of the war.

They had been waiting for it for so long, that even the people that was dissatisfied towards Ura and I were raising war cries.

A battle where they had to always be prepared to fight, finally ended.

As they are returning as victors, their expressions were bright.



And, I.....

“It ended, Samejima.” (Velt)

“Yeah..... it really ended..... my second life, that is.....” (Sharkryu)

Needed to come to one conclusion.

The conclusion of my farewell with my friend.

## Chapter 27: I'll take it for you

I need to make a conclusion as well

"I'm so sorry, boy." (Gyanza)

I'm begging you, stop erasing your presence and approaching me.

It's pathetic, but my body has completely become scared of this woman.

Gyanza, who unexpectedly showed her face from behind me, embraced me tightly before I could even resist.

"I wanted to save you, but, I'm sorry." (Gyanza)

"L, let me go!" (Velt)

"As I could not save you today, I will save you another day without fail."  
(Gyanza)

It's no use.

To other people, she probably has a beautiful and gentle smile that would fascinate them, but all I see is a talking anaconda.

Is this how it feels to be licked all over by a snake's tongue?

It gives me the chills,

"Chu-" (Gyanza)

"Muu!" (Velt)

Once again, she ate me.

However, she didn't completely eat me this time since this situation is different to the situation from before.

"Ve, Velt!" (Ura)

"Wo, woman over there, what are you doing!" (Forna)

Two lightning speed girls.

A human and a demon, even if their races are different, they are both in the highest position, royalty.

The double princesses forcefully took me from Gyanza's embrace.

Despite being children, both of them have oni-like expressions with their

bloodthirst fully open, and they are shouting at Gyanza.

“What are you doing to my Velt!” (Forna)

“Don’t make a move on my Velt!” (Ura)

..... Nn?

“.....?” (Forna)

“.....?” (Ura)

At that moment, the two princesses finally realized each other’s existences.

“Wait, you demon there. You mentioned something quite inexcusable.”

(Forna)

“You too, what are you saying after suddenly appearing like that. In the first place, you’re being too familiar with my Velt. Leave!” (Ura)

“Ha? Fu, ufufufu, fo, for me to have an auditory hallucination. Or else, did you just let out a thoughtless remark? My, my Velt is yours? That is not even funny as a joke.” (Forna)

“I’m the one that doesn’t find it funny. Both that mad general and you, human women really make me mad.” (Ura)

These guys should think about the situation.

Rather, don’t pull my arms from both sides!

“Ouch ouch ouch, he, hey! Let go of me first, you two! Ouch, stop, stop playing tug of war.” (Velt)

“Let go of Velt!” (Forna)

“Release Velt!” (Ura)

Wait, now’s not the time for that!

Oi, what the hell are Galva and Tyler trying to stop laughing about!

Oi, what the hell is Farga so shocked about!

“Let us meet again, boy. Next time I am looking forward to meeting your true self, that is not being manipulated by demons.” (Gyanza)

And, why the hell is Gyanza, the original cause, throwing me a kiss while returning of her own accord.

Rather, I don’t ever want to meet you again.

However, during that exchange, lightly bows to the stretched out Samejima.

“Goodbye, demon king Sharkryu.” (Gyanza)

Goodbye.

That was also a word that signified an eternal farewell.

“O, oh yeah, Samejima!” (Velt)

That’s right. It’s not the time to be playing house.

Tearing off Ura and Forna’s hands, I ran towards Samejima, who might die at any time.

“Oi, Samejima! Samejima! So, so cruel.” (Velt)

I became speechless. He was cut up in an indescribably cruel way, and his body was hideously burned from fire.

“O, oi, Forna, can’t you do something with recovery magic?” (Velt)

“Velt, but.....” (Forna)

“I know that you’re hesitant because he’s the demon king. But I want to do something! Can you do something?” (Velt)

“No, that’s not what I mean, but Velt..... the demon king is already.....” (Forna)

Forna shakes her head sideways.

That wasn’t a refusal to cure the demon king.

She has an expression that says there’s nothing she can do about it.

“Asakura, it’s fine.” (Sharkryu)

“Fine? Wait, you!” (Velt)

“I already know. The injury I received from the hero even reached the core, which could be called a demon’s heart. I already..... can’t be saved.” (Sharkryu)

It’s not that I hadn’t resolved myself for it.

However, in the end, my resolution was a dumb, shallow one.

When the time really comes, as expected, my heart wavers.

“W, what the hell are you saying while looking all satisfied!” (Velt)

“Asakura.....” (Sharkryu)

“You, you still have so many things to talk about, don’t you!” (Velt)

I thought I was choosing so I wouldn’t regret anything.

But, in the end, nothing changed.

I was weak, dumb, and regretted it in the end.

“Asakura, I’m already satisfied enough.” (Sharkryu)

“You!” (Velt)

“Ura, come..... I already..... don’t seem to be able to stand.” (Sharkryu)

Each time he talked, cracks ran across his body like glass, and slowly break. It’s probably better for him not to talk anymore. Too much talking.....

“Yes, father.” (Ura)

Despite that, why have you already resolved yourself. Aren’t you only 10 years old? The same age as me. Let alone that, even my mental age is 17 years old, so she should be very young, compared to me. And yet, why have you already accepted Samejima’s death, and is trying to listen to his last words?

“Ura, I’m sorry. You will probably go through tough feeling after this.” (Sharkryu)

“No..... I have inherited many things from father. My father as a king. My father as a parent. To me, both sides of father is my pride.” (Ura)

“Good grief, you said something quite adorable. If you were the type to cry even a little, I would have, had the regret, of not, dying with, satisfaction.” (Sharkryu)

“You can..... leave the, leave the rest, to me.” (Ura)

No, that’s wrong. She hasn’t accepted it. Exactly because she understands there’s nothing she can do about it, Ura is trying to at least behave firm in front of her father, so that he can pass away with a peace of mind. It should be fine for her to cry. If she’s enduring her tears when her eyes are that wet and her whole body is shaking, it should be fine for her to cry.

“Ura, I, I fought humans based on my own belief, intention, and cause. However, there’s no need for you to receive those.” (Sharkryu)

“Father.....” (Ura)

“Like Asaku, no, Velt here, there are people who can understand each other from just something small. I want you to think, see humans, and connect with

them.” (Sharkryu)

“Yes. I understand, father. Because I am..... fine.” (Ura)

“I’m praying for your happiness.” (Sharkryu)

I don’t know whether not crying is praiseworthy.  
However, that must be another one of Ura’s strengths.  
Will I be able to protect her from now on? Honestly speaking, I had almost no confidence.

“Asakura.” (Sharkryu)

“Don’t say ‘Asakura’ ‘Asakura’ so much. Well I don’t mind if you do it though.”  
(Velt)

“This time for sure, it’s my ‘no matter what’ wish. I’m begging you, my,  
Ura.....” (Sharkryu)

“..... Like I said, why! Why can you just entrust her to me so easily!” (Velt)  
“?” (Sharkryu)

I have no confidence I can do it. And yet, why does every last one of them overestimate me that much!

“I’m a helpless idiot. But, you’re also a big idiot! You went and entrusted something more important than your own life to me. Like you saw before, I’m an idiot. I don’t think things through. I didn’t even understand what what you did would do. I have no power, no talent, and no resolve. Everything’s mediocre. I’m not the kind of guy you think I am!” (Velt)

I wanted to spit it all out. I don’t have that kind of value.  
I’m not a man you can rely on.  
Even if I try to meet the expectations, even if I resolve myself, all I do is regret.  
Samejima’s final request. Even though the answer had come out long ago, I still just spat out complaints.

“Ka, haha, hahahahahaha.” (Sharkryu)

And yet, why are you laughing like you feel relieved about everything!

“Asakura. For me, what’s important isn’t about having power to protect Ura, or anything like that.” (Sharkryu)

“What, did you say?” (Velt)

“For me, what’s important is having a man that just desperately worries about

Ura's future as one, young child, without thinking about how she's a demon princess. You're the only man in this world that doesn't see Ura as demon king Sharkryu's daughter. Having you see Ura as a friend's daughter, not a demon king's, is the best for me." (Sharkryu)

I felt more at ease for just a bit.

The person I'm protecting isn't the demon king's daughter, it's my classmate's daughter.

Of course, there's no difference in that it's still plenty important, and I have no choice but to take responsibility.

"I don't know what was important to you as a demon king. But, I'll do something about what was important to you as a man. Is that fine?" (Velt)

"It's plenty..... that's all..... I need." (Sharkryu)

I can't betray my friend's completely relieved face.

Even if I'm mediocre and even if I'm shallow, I still plan on resolving myself in my own way.

"If you ever, reunite..... with everyone, say hello..... for me." (Sharkryu)

"Yeah. If we have a class reunion, I'll at least toast towards heaven for you."

(Velt)

"Heaven is impossible..... I'll, be in, hell..... after all." (Sharkryu)

"Anywhere's fine for something like that." (Velt)

We were able to return to being high school students for just this moment. To Asakura Ryuuma and Samejima Ryouichi.

"I hope you meet them. Everyone..... and Kamino as well." (Sharkryu)

"Yeah!" (Velt)

And then, by the time I realized it, we had naturally held out our hands. Just like that time at the athletics festival.

"I'm going to pass it to you....." (Sharkryu)

"It's far heavier than a baton, but I'll take it and run." (Velt)

It was weak, but I certainly heard a dry sound.

I became the only man in this world that exchanged a high five with the demon king.

“See ya..... my best..... friend.” (Sharkryu)

Like I said, since when! Since when was I your..... well, I guess it's fine.  
In the first place, it might not matter since when.  
That's why, I'll accept it and say it.

“Yeah, see you again. Best friend.” (Velt)

The next day, it was known all throughout the continent.  
Demon king Sharkryu, was killed in action.

And in my heart, a never disappearing truth once again remained.  
My classmate, Samejima Ryouichi, died for the second time.....



## Chapter 28: DOGEZA

*The title for this chapter actually is written in english, and says “DOGEZA”*

—————

I had come to the throne room lightheartedly many times, but just for today, it looked different.

The atmosphere of the place was tense.

My childhood friend’s father showed his face as a king, and the castle guards that always tease me showed faces of soldiers that will protect the king and the country.

“Pardoning the daughter of demon king Sharkryu, Ura Vesparda, and, also sheltering her in this country, is what you are asking for?” (King)

He’s not the usual, kind old man. He is unmistakably the king. Wearing his clothing of authority, he is putting out an atmosphere that says he wouldn’t allow a half-hearted response. Dodging the question wouldn’t work.

“Velt. I really cannot believe it, that you are Sharkryu’s friend. As someone who even changed your diapers, I thought there was nothing I did not know about you. No, that is not just for me. Of course, that is the same for the princess, Tyler, Galva, Forna, and that foolish son there. When did you meet the demon king?” (King)

“I can’t say. Or rather, I met the『Demon King』today. However, we got along.” (Velt)

“You are telling me to believe that? No, you are telling me to consent with an answer like that?” (King)

There’s no way I could tell him that he’s my acquaintance from my past life. Besides, what the king is saying is correct. Of course he wouldn’t believe such an absurd story. But that’s all I’m going to say.

“Velt.....” (Ura)  
“Don’t worry, Ura.” (Velt)

All I'll do is desperately protect what was entrusted to me.

"Yeah..... sorry about this..... Velt." (Ura)

"Why do you have to apologize." (Velt)

"Because of me, I'm giving trouble to Velt....." (Ura)

"A brat doesn't need to worry about me. This isn't for your sake or anything. If I had to say, it would be something like a man's stubbornness." (Velt)

That's right. She is just my stubbornness.

So, a brat shouldn't be looking downwards like that with such a worried face.

"Velt....." (Ura)

Saying that, she tightly grips my hand and grip her hand back.

To comfort a crying child; my friend's daughter. Thinking about it like that, I wondered if a father's mental state is this sort of thing.

A paternity instinct, so to speak.

So.....

"..... Tch....." (Forna)

So, don't glare at her with an oni-like face, Fornia.

It's spoiling her face that I just recently thought was cute.

"I hold responsibility for Ura. From here on, I'll take care of her. So, I want you to forgive me." (Velt)

However, as expected, the biggest barrier right now is the king.

Sorry for thinking you were a king whose only redeeming feature was his kindness.

He'll easily refute my half baked answers.

"Velt. Certainly, as far as I can see right now, princess Ura might not be worrying. However, princess Ura is a demon, and the fact that she is a demon princess will not change. It is also true that her father has killed many humans, and was destroyed by humans." (King)

"Ye, yeah, I know. But Ura was told by her old man not to live for revenge. She has also engraved that in her heart." (Velt)

"For now, that is. However, what about in a few years? Her wisdom and field of view will spread, and yet, would you still be able to guarantee that she will not

harbour hatred against humans again? No, what do you plan to do about the humans who find her existence unpleasant? What will you do if a survivor of the demon king army, or the Vesparda Kingdom proposes for her to revive the kingdom?” (King)

“Tha, that is, well.” (Velt)

“What will you do if the officials of Bolbardie try to take revenge on her?” (King)

“I, I will, do something.....” (Velt)

“What will you do if this causes other countries to lose their trust in us, and our country is exposed to danger? In reality, it is not an exaggeration to say that this matter has caused the trust of humanity’s great allied forces towards our country to fall greatly.” (King)

I can’t refute any of those points.

Obviously, as a delinquent who threw punches before debating, none of my words have any persuasive power.

Besides, realistically, I have nothing to show my determination as a powerless 10 year old.

“I know. No, I know there are plenty of things that I don’t know. But, even so, even so!” (Velt)

If there’s something I can do, then this is it.

“Pl..... please! Lend Ura..... no, please lend me power!” (Velt)

“—————!!!!”

Including my past life, this is my first time ever prostrating myself.

“I couldn’t do anything! Without being able to listen to what problems he had or what suffering he went through, nor did I find out what he thought as he lived! Since I wouldn’t understand even if I listened..... with that kind of reason, I dodged it.” (Velt)

To be honest, I didn’t want to do something so miserable.

However, I don’t have any other methods to petition, nor show my feelings.

“Despite that, he called me his friend. Even though I’m not special at all, a guy who is fighting with the world as the stage, thought of me as his friend. A guy like that even went as far as lowering his head, that definitely isn’t trivial, to

entrust everything to me, while saying he believes me, and that it's a request he wants me to do no matter what!" (Velt)

Pride? Something like that doesn't mean anything to my current self. In the first place, I have already lost all pride that I should have protected.

"So, I want to at least save her no matter what! But, I can't do anything by myself! So, so, I'm begging you! Please lend me power! As long as it's something I can do, I'll do anything!" (Velt)

I'm pathetic. Even though she was entrusted to me, in the end, all I can do is lower my head like this.

But right now, if all I can do is lower my head, then I'll lower it no matter how long.

"..... Velt..... raise your head." (King)

What will the king do to me?

Will he laugh scornfully at this child that can't think of anything?

However,

"This is the first time that you have requested something so much that you would lower your head to us." (King)

The king was smiling, and that expression was the one I knew well, a warm, fatherly smile.

"Velt. Ever since you were young, you have been changing little by little. When you talk with Forna and I, or anyone else, you would behave without keeping up appearances. However, you have never requested something from the bottom of your heart. When you were troubled, you would either conclude it within yourself or give up. At the very least, you have never begged someone before. It was the same towards your parents as well." (King)

Certainly, that might be true.

I have never sought enough help for me to lower my head.

I would either do something about it by myself, or judge that I wouldn't be able to do it and give up.

That especially was the case ever since I regained the memories of Asakura Ryuuma.

It's because in this world where no one knows my real self, even if I had been superficially associating with them, in my mind, I thought they were unrelated people.

"The only exception, was Melma-shi. When your parents passed away, you said you wanted him to take you in, enough to lower your head. You relied on him. To be honest, I was envious of Melma-shi of that. Even though you only just met him, you trusted him that much." (King)

Yes, sensei was an exception.  
The person who truly knew me.  
For that reason, I relied on him and depended on him.

"Therefore, Velt. I want to live up to your request as much as possible. However, even if we hold such feelings, there is no guarantee that the citizens would agree with us. Do you understand that?" (King)

"Yeah, I understand." (Velt)

"We will also do as much as possible. However, I want you to resolve yourself as you two might be the ones that go through the most painful feelings." (King)

I know. Since the moment I high fived Samejima, I had already prepared myself for the worst.

"You've been rambling for too long, damn dad." (Farga)

At that moment, in between us, Farga, who had been silent the whole time, cut into our conversation.

His line of sight was not pointed towards me, but to Ura, who is hiding behind me.

"The problem here, is the feelings of that damn demon." (Farga)

"!" (Ura)

"Since before, my damn dad has been rambling on, and none of the content has been wrong. But you know, you damn demon, the most important thing here is your feelings." (Farga)

Farga's sharp, bloodlust-like aura was mercilessly concentrated on Ura. With her body becoming slightly stiff, she firmly gripped my hand back and stood in front of Farga.

“My feelings?” (Ura)

“That’s right. How will you respond to our..... no, my stupid younger brother’s feelings? Can you swear that you won’t betray Velt, my stupid younger brother?” (Farga)

Ura’s feelings.

Come to think of it, I hadn’t confirmed that either.

Although I silently brought Ura here as Samejima told me to, I hadn’t asked Ura what she really thinks.

Then, Ura.....

“What I really think..... I don’t want to cause trouble to Velt..... and I also don’t think it’s fine for just me to be helped. Even though my father, and Ruuga, and everyone passed away..... it’s just me.” (Ura)

“Oi, Ura!” (Velt)

“But! ..... Even so, if I can be selfish..... I don’t want to be alone..... so, I want to be together with Velt.” (Ura)

What Ura really thinks. No, her state of exposing her weakness.

For the first time today, I felt like I saw Ura show an appearance suitable for her age.

“In that case, the answer is simple. You won’t betray my stupid younger brother. And, as long as my stupid younger brother says he’ll protect you, I’ll brush away all the damn hindrances.” (Farga)

“Farga.....” (Velt)

“Damn dad, and my stupid younger sister. Are you fine with that?” (Farga)

Sooner or later, will I be calling Farga ‘aniki’?

I would seriously call him that though.

“I will not oppose a request from Velt’s heart.” (Forna)

“Forna.....” (Velt)

“However! However! I will just say this to princess Ura! I do not mind if Velt protects you. But..... I will not give Velt to you.” (Forna)

Even while having a sulky look, Forna was nodding.

Tyler, Galva, and the imperial knights were all nodding while smiling as well.

“..... Thank you, everyone, I am indebted to all of you!” (Velt)

This time, I’m not requesting for anything. I’m thanking them.

It is strange.

Even though it felt that uncomfortable when I prostrated myself to request, if my feelings of gratitude is fill while I prostrate, it’s still not enough to show the feelings filling up my heart.

“Well then, Ura Vesparda-dono!” (King)

“Ye, yes!” (Ura)

“Welcome to the Elfarshia Kingdom! We give you a heartfelt welcome!” (King)

Ura was at a loss of words at the king’s words as he smiled.

She repeated saying “thank you,” while lowering her head.

And then,

“Velt!” (Ura)

“O, oi.” (Velt)

“Velt, Velt, Velt, I..... I, might cause you trouble, but.....” (Ura)

She must feel relieved, since the mask that was supporting her came off, and she burst into tears, exhausted.

I felt that Ura’s body that was strongly clinging to me was truly small.

“You aren’t trouble! It’s fine for you to live! Laugh like a brat, cry, and get angry, since you can grow older normally!” (Velt)

“Uu, uuu, ah, a, uwaaaaaaaaaaaaa.” (Ura)

“Listen, there are a few conditions. First, don’t lie to me. The same for secrets. And, immediately consult with me.” (Velt)

“Yeah.” (Ura)

Haha, I heard this somewhere..... no, it’s a phrase I was told before.

Is this fine? Samejima..... watch over me for a while.

“Uuuuuu, muuuuu, uuuuuuuuuuu.” (Forna)

“Forna-sama, well, I can guess how you feel, but please be big-hearted for today.” (Galva)

“I know that, Galva! I, I ob, obviously, have a big, hea..... and will overlook..... however! It is just, just, just, just, just for today!” (Forna)

And, Forna seems to be furious, so I'll need to do something about that.....



## Chapter 29: Thus, the precocious brat is alone again

I'm sorry.

I am currently in a seiza position inside the shop.

In front of me, sensei is taking an imposing stance.

By the way, his wife put Ura in the bath, since she's all worn out.

"Velt. You know, my house is a ramen restaurant. It's not an orphanage, alright?" (Melma)

"Ye, yeah." (Velt)

"In addition, when I thought you were late coming back from delivering food, apparently you were meeting one of the seven great demon kings~?

Furthermore, that demon king was Samejima~? And then you're going to take care of his daughter because of Samejima's request~?" (Melma)

"Ye, yeah, um, I'm sorry sensei. There wasn't much time to discuss about it, so the discussion ended up advancing in leaps and bounds. And so." (Velt)

I talked to sensei truthfully about everything that I couldn't tell the king, Forna, and the others.

After listening to everything, sensei was either angry, or had mixed feelings, as he was shaking his head sideways with an indescribable expression.

"Well, if I was in the same situation, I probably would have taken in that girl. You aren't mistaken at all." (Melma)

"Sensei." (Velt)

"But, what I'm frustrated at, is myself, that couldn't do anything." (Melma)

Sensei's feelings are slightly different to me, as they have sadness mixed in. That's right. Sensei was also the homeroom teacher for Samejima.

"I wanted to meet him at least once, even if it's just a glance." (Melma)

Even though his own student died in an accident, reincarnated into a demon king, fought with the world, was burdened with great things, and might have suffered, sensei couldn't do anything even until the end, when he passed away.

He must have had the feelings of wanting to meet him at least once.

I also wanted Samejima to meet sensei.

I'm frustrated about that as well.

"I'm really sorry, sensei. I couldn't do anything about Samejima. I couldn't lecture him, listen to his troubles, or even help him. On top of that, even though I said I'll take in his daughter, I had to rely on the king and you in the end."  
(Velt)

On top of that, I'm telling him to take care of someone else's brat in his happy, married life.

The troubles to sensei will.....

"Don't look down on me, idiot. Do you think my family wouldn't be able to take care of one or two brats?" (Melma)

As I made an apologetic face, sensei suddenly made a fist.

"I mean, my wife would probably be in high spirits, saying something like 'we have a daughter, yay~'. However, that's not the problem." (Melma)

"Eh, then, is it that she's a demon?" (Velt)

"Ah~, that's certainly a problem as well. She's just a small child with pointed ears to me, but the people of this world probably wouldn't see her like that. My wife is different though. But, the biggest problem isn't that either." (Melma)

"The, then, what's the biggest problem?" (Velt)

"It's about what we should do about that girl's future." (Melma)

Future. That was something Samejima said to me too.

What's most important, isn't to have the power to protect the demon king's daughter.

It's whether or not I can seriously think about Ura and her future.

"Velt. In this kind of world that's familiar with wars full of magic, my experience as a teacher or as a guidance counselor has no meaning what so ever. Listen, in this country, in a human's continent, what kind of life can a demon have?" (Melma)

"Yeah, well, certainly." (Velt)

"The king said he might let her go to school. But whether she can properly attend is a different matter. What about friends? What about finding

employment? Or else, is she going to return to the demon country? There's no end to it once you start thinking about it." (Melma)

"True. I was told a lot of things by the king as well. I'll have to seriously think about her." (Velt)

"That's right. Besides, you will eventually leave this country to search for Kamino. At that time, what will you do about that girl? To be honest, I don't know how much I can do for that girl. I'm the same as you." (Melma)

It's exactly as sensei said.

And, I hadn't been honestly thinking about Kamino.

One day, I'll leave this country to search for Kamino. There is no falsehood in that.

However, I hadn't thought about what I'll do with Ura at that time.

Sensei had already thought about Ura seriously.

And, that is,

"You're going to leave this place someday. That's why I didn't just make you do odd jobs, but also taught you how to make ramen. I'm not going to make you succeed the shop or something like that, but it's because I thought it would be better if you had already learnt something before you jump up in the world." (Melma)

The same for me as well.

Sensei was thinking about me a lot more than how much I thought.

"In this world, I have only done cooking. So, the things I can pass on to my child are limited. All I have is a beautiful wife, a cooking ability, and a damn cheeky student, after all. As someone like that, what can I do for Samejima's daughter? It's pathetic, but I ended up thinking about that." (Melma)

I'm the same. No, there are even less things I can do than sensei.

But, I prepared myself for the worst. So, I'll do anything, no matter what it is. That's what I think.

"Dear~, Velt-kun, here, please look!" (Melma's Wife) (TL Note: Was she given a name?)

At that moment, as if destroying our atmosphere, we heard his wife's happy, cheerful voice.

“Ta-dah, Ura-chan’s pajamas suit her, don’t they! I borrowed them from the princess.” (Melma’s Wife)

With wet hair straight out of the bath, Ura timidly showed her face. She’s apparently wearing Forna’s pajamas. It’s a princess’s pajama with a light blue flower pattern, and frills on it. The length goes up to around her knees. Since she’s the same age as Forna, the size is just right. In addition to that, it’s Forna’s pajamas, so a high class feeling that has both cuteness and elegance is drifting about her. However, the fact that there’s no out of place feeling as she’s wearing that made me feel that Ura really is a princess.

“Ooh, cute cute.” (Velt)  
“Are, are you, sure?” (Ura)  
“That looks good on you, Ura-chan. You’re probably tired for today, so sleep in Velt’s room. Velt, you spread a sheet here and sleep. You don’t have any complaints, right?” (Melma)  
“Eh, but I’m a freeloader, so I will sleep on the floor.” (Ura)  
“Don’t mind it. This brat is a guy that can sleep like a log even if he’s flat on a desk. Something like this is nothing to him.” (Melma)

Sensei reassuringly patted Ura’s shoulder. Since Ura was nervous, she must have been surprised. It’s probably her first time talking with a human adult this frankly after all. Sensei isn’t going to call Ura a princess anymore. In reality, she’s not a princess anymore, so that isn’t wrong.

“Ura-chan.” (Melma)  
“Yeah. No, yes.” (Ura) (TL Note: Correcting herself to speak more formally)  
“A lot of things will probably happen from now on, but uncle, this aun-, young lady and this boy will help you as much as possible. Let’s do our best living together.” (Melma)

Leaving aside how a black aura came out of his wife that’s usually quiet when he was about to say aunt, Ura’s chest was probably hit by sensei’s consideration, as she seemed like she was about to cry, and nodded. And then, fixing her posture, she lowered her head deeply.

“Um, so, although it has suddenly become like this, I cannot thank you enough from the bottom of my heart for your consideration. I know I will most likely cause much trouble, but I will quickly make sure not to cause trouble for everyone. Until then, please treat me well.” (Ura)

A very deep thanks. How admirable. I thought about stroking her head. Then, seeing Ura’s figure, sensei seemed like he was about to cry.

“Unbelievable. For there to be a 10 year old in this world that can properly greet and show good faith, but there’s also a guy that can’t even show good faith nor properly lower his head, even though his mental age is past 17 years.” (Melma)

“Geez, Ura-chan! Children should be causing trouble for their parents! Since children cause a lot of trouble, it makes us think that we should work hard after all.” (Melma’s wife)

There’s a heap of things to think about after this. But, I feel like it’ll work out somehow.

I feel like I got another family member. It feels like I got a younger sister that resembles a daughter.

While laughing with each other, we decided to rest today. There will be a lot of difficult things from tomorrow, but we swore as a four that we will work hard.

Too many things happened today so I’m tired too. Slightly moving the chairs and tables inside the store, I lay sheets on the floor and collapsed onto it on the spot. Just like this, I’m going to fall fast asleep. That’s what I thought. However,

“Velt..... are you awake?” (Ura)

It seems someone came with soft steps. Well, even if I say that, there’s only one person that would do that.

“What’s up~?” (Velt)

While hugging a pillow, Ura was fidgeting for some reason. What’s she doing?

“Hey, Velt. Um.” (Ura)

“Ahn?” (Velt)

.....?

This brat is looking at me with a somewhat helpless face.

For some reason, she even brought a pillow.

Oi oi oi oi, is it that? She’s not going to say she’s too scared to sleep alone right? She’s not a brat after all.....

“So, um, just for today, um.” (Ura)

No, she was completely a brat. And probably because she’s embarrassed, she’s finding it hard to say that.

Her eyes looked to the side and me, multiple times, and they aren’t steady. As expected, no matter how mature she looks, she’s a brat inside.

Well, all her family and the people close with her died. It’s only natural. I guess there’s no helping it.

“Here, your back will hurt since it’s the ground, but go ahead.” (Velt)

“!” (Ura)

“Uoh, ca, calm down.” (Velt)

When I tried to spread the sheets and let her on, Ura suddenly slipped in.

“Velt.” (Ura)

“Ahn?” (Velt)

“You are sometimes mature, and treat me like a child.” (Ura)

“Hmm, ah~, yeah.” (Velt)

Well, in reality, you’re basically a brat to me though.

“Don’t treat me like a child.” (Ura)

If I said “if so, then go sleep in the bed alone,” would it be childish?

“But, thanks.” (Ura)

“..... Yeah.” (Velt)

“Without you, I really would have been all alone after all.....” (Ura)

By the time I realized it, Ura’s hands were around my neck, her body was on my chest, and her legs were somehow clinging onto me as if I’m a body pillow.

Annoying.

But well, it's warm.

"My father, Ruuga and all of the royal guards protected me, everyone, left me alone, everyone....." (Ura)

"Yeah~, but, um. But wasn't it good in the end?" (Velt)

"Wha, what do you mean by-!" (Ura)

"No, like, what is it? The fact that they protected you means that they think your life is more important than their own, right? So, since they protected the person that's most important to them, wasn't that good? Well, I don't want to die though." (Velt)

It's no use. Like, I can't think of any good comforting words.  
Besides, she seems kinda angry too. Ah~, parenting is hard, huh.

"Even if that was the case....." (Ura)

"What is it." (Velt)

"Even if everyone thought that way, I definitely don't want you to die as well."  
(Ura)

"Yeah." (Velt)

I don't want to die twice after all.  
As of now, I still can't die like Samejima, where I have no regrets.

"Velt....." (Ura)

"What is it this time? You should sleep already. The mornings in a ramen restaurant are early." (Velt)

"Well..... um....." (Ura)

"?" (Velt)

"You hug me tightly as well." (Ura)

No, I'm being hugged tightly right now, but what?  
You're telling me to hug you?  
How is it? Is it still safe age-wise?  
Since I felt it was doubtful, I thought of dodging it, but at that moment.

"Well, that's~." (Velt)

"Chu!" (Ura)

With a surprise attack, I felt my lips lightly touch something.

“!” (Velt)

“Go, good night! Ku, ku~, ku~, ku~, u, u~nn, munyamunya.” (Ura) (TL Note: Making snoring noises, and the last munya thing is onomatopoeia when talking in your sleep.)

Without showing her face, Ura just buried her face in my chest and is forcing herself to sound like a sleeping person.

This..... precocious brat!

Well, I'll let her off just for today.



## Chapter 30: A harmless morning

Hea, heavy.

I've completely gotten into the habit of rising early now.

It's not because of the ramen restaurant's opening hours, but because there are various things to do, such as preparing the soup.

However, my body couldn't rise that well just for today.

Having a life abrading fight that exhausted my body and mind yesterday is also part of it, but there is something other than that which is physically weighing my body down, not letting it rise.

"Arya?" (Velt) (TL Note: Expression of surprise)

There's something on top of my stomach, and that something is clinging onto me.

Noticing that, I opened my eyes slightly to see a princess fast asleep in front of me.

"Ah, ah~, that reminds me, I let her sleep with me yesterday, didn't I?" (Velt)

She's sleeping well. Just, when I saw her face, I could see that the area around her eyes were red. They are traces of tears.

However, seeing her fast asleep state, I was able to feel that she trusts me enough to relax her guard around me.

But like~, I can't move if she's sleeping while clinging onto me.

"Good grief. Like, hey, I can see your white and light blue panties. Isn't that improper as a princess?" (Velt)

I stretched out the bottom of her dress that had been rolled up, – to cover it up – and I slowly raised my body.

As if untying an entwined string, I carefully and slowly tried to take out my hands and feet so that she wouldn't wake up.....

"V-, Ve, Velt!" (Ura)

"Uwo, you woke up!" (Velt)

That surprised me.

I only moved a bit, but Ura suddenly woke up, even though she should have been fast asleep.

With a severely flustered, no, with an expression that looked like she was seeing a nightmare, she looked at me, and after blinking multiple times, she showed an expression that looked like she was relieved from the bottom of her heart.

“I, I’m glad……” (Ura)

“O, ooh?” (Velt)

“I thought you were going to leave me and go somewhere.” (Ura)

She reacted because of something like that?

Well, she was originally really strong, a lot more than I am. So maybe she was able to tell from my presence or something?

Even so, she’s panicking too much……

“Velt, um…… good morning.” (Ura)

“……… Yeah.” (Velt)

“Puh, fufufufufu.” (Ura)

This time, she happily burst into laughter.

What is it?

“It’s a strange feeling.” (Ura)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“Until now, when I woke up in the mornings, the castle court lady or Ruuga and the others would be standing at the door. But it’s my first time sleeping while wrapped in the same sheets as someone else and greeting them this close.” (Ura)

“Ooh, I see I see. As expected, princesses are different. In the beginning, sensei beat me with a ladle until I woke up.” (Velt)

“But this kind of thing is nice too. Yeah, I’m somewhat happy.” (Ura)

“Haha, I see. But did you not sleep together with your old man?” (Velt)

“What are you saying. I am already 10 years old, you know? There’s no way I would do something so childish.” (Ura)

…… Would it be better if I tsukkomi’d here?

No, if I'm going to tsukkomi, rather than to her words right now, should it be Ura's current expression where she's putting a finger on her lips while looking at me with sleepy, upturned eyes?

"Velt..... nn." (Ura)

"....." (Velt)

"Come on, it, it, it's that, it's that good morning thing. Yesterday, I did it for a good night, so, I, did it, right?" (Ura)

"....." (Velt)

"Fro, from, from next time, you need to do it in the morning. Come on, nn~!" (Ura)

While pointing at her own lips with her index finger, she keeps pushing out her lips, as if she wants something from me.

"..... Velt, nn~, nn! Come on, nn!" (Ura)

Samejima. What is your daughter? Was it your daily routine to give her a good morning kiss?

You, did you entrust her to me while knowing that?

In addition, there's no option to dodge it by going for her cheek or forehead.

Only an option for her lips?

I was relieved she relaxed her guard around me, but this is too much.

As I thought, like Forna, she's a precocious brat.....

"Hey!" (Velt)

"Fugya! That hurt! Wha, what are you doing!" (Ura)

I pinched Ura's nose and twisted it.

Glaring at me so reproachfully is no good either.

Rather, if I seriously did it, sensei would drive me out of his house and Samejima would probably get resurrected from hell to kill me.

No, would Samejima be roaring with laughter while watching this from hell?

At any rate, I can't stand going along with a brat's kyakya ufufu every single time.

"Velt~, you~, do, do you not want to do it with me!" (Ura)

"Kuhahahaha, how unfortunate." (Velt)

"Uu~, curse you~, for, for me to be so~." (Ura)

“Fuun, stuuupid. I don’t need any 10 year olds.” (Velt)

Rather, the brats in this world should really be taught aesthetic sensibility, right?

That’s a lot more important than magic.

“Just because you’re shy!” (Ura)

“No, you, why are you acting so conceited…….” (Velt)

“It can’t be helped! You really can’t be helped. You really are pathetic as a man!” (Ura)

“Shut up. It’s none of your business.” (Velt)

“Good grief, you really can’t be helped. Since you really can’t be helped, I will have to do it since it can’t be helped.” (Ura)

“Hah?” (Velt)

……. Damn it…….

“Nn.” (Ura)

“Nn!” (Velt)

She took the chance while I was completely unprepared.

Ura jumped at me, put her hands around my head and completely locked me, making me unable to move.

Samejima……. are you watching? I properly refused her already, right? I’m not in the wrong, right?

So like…….

“Excuse me for coming so early in the morning! Velt, are you awake? Did anything else happen with that woman from yester-……!” (Forna)

“Princess, it is still early. Velt-kun and the others are probably still sleep……. oh my.” (Galva(?))

Like I said…….

“O~i, Velt, are you awake~? Wash your face, because we’re going to be preparing…….” (Melma)

So like, please explain the situation instead of me.

Tell them I haven’t done anything wrong.

“U, ah, wa, ah, y, you cheateeeeeeeeeeeeeer! You theiving demon uuu!”  
(Forna)

“You lolicon kiiiiiiid!” (Melma)

Crap, it’s become really troublesome now.  
I did think that there would be dispute sooner or later, but damn, just as expected, or rather, do these guys not care about their chastity as a princess? Both the princesses like me.

“You, you, you! Wha wha, what are you doing to Velt!” (Forna)  
“No, nothing in particular, I’m just giving him a good morning greeting. Aren’t you lacking manners as a princess to enter someone’s love affair without permission?” (Ura)  
“Ha? What did you say? A good morning greeting? Lacking manners? How can you say I am lacking in manners when you made a move on my Velt?” (Forna)  
“Wrong, he became mine from yesterday!” (Ura)  
“What are you saying! Velt has been mine since five years ago!” (Forna)  
“But I already kissed him!” (Ura)  
“How unfortunate! I have already done that long ago!” (Forna)

Oi oi, I’m begging you so stop fighting. It’s early in the morning, and like, it’s loud.  
Sensei, I’m begging you too, so just calm down.

“Velt~, you~, do you even understand that Ura-chan is your classmate’s daughter~?” (Melma)  
“Yeah~, that’s why I refused her~, ahh, it’s just troublesome. Just hit me, it’s too troublesome to object anymore.” (Velt)  
“In that case, I won’t hold back!” (Melma)  
“Ouch! You actually hit me! You actually hit me right now!” (Velt)  
“Ahh? Then, what are you going to do about it, you damn brat! Sue me? Corporal punishment? Even if the PTA expose me on the net, there’s nothing I’m scared of right now!” (Melma) (TL Note: PTA = Parent-Teacher Association.)  
“Think about it normally, this brat is just playing around!” (Velt)

What is this? I’m not a lolicon or anything.  
Like, sensei knows that as well, right?

“Honestly, in the first place, sensei~, you already know, right~? The person I’m in love with~.” (Velt)

Exactly, even if these 10 year olds cling onto me, they’re no more than precocious brats to me.

The woman I like~, or rather, the woman I fell in love with is~.

“Aah~, look, I have..... Kamino, after all.....” (Velt)

Crap. I feel kind of shy saying that.

I’m probably making a super shameful face right now.....

“V-, Velt! Who is that person called Kamino! You have talked about her before as well!” (Forna)

“V-, Velt! Who is that Kamino! You talked about her with father yesterday as well!” (Ura)

And why do you guys work so smoothly together in a time like this?

Rather, you were listening, huh.

These child prodigy princesses are probably stronger than the demon king, aren’t they.....

I was shot up, kissing the ceiling as my consciousness flew away, and for the first time, I experienced going back to sleep after it became troublesome in sensei’s house.

## Chapter 31: Princess love battle

I didn't think being liked by women would be this troublesome.  
No, in this case, I should call it being liked by children.  
Taking the chance while I was delivering, I decided to show Ura around the town, so we're walking side by side.  
She forcefully made me hold hands with her, but whatever.  
For some reason, Forna is also accompanying us and holding my hand on the other side, but whatever.

I'm delivering, but since I usually carry the wooden carrying box with levitation (floating), there's no problem even if my arms are occupied.

"Fuuu! Fuuu! Fuuu!" (Forna) (TL Note: Just my guess on who's making which noises.)

"Kishaaa!" (Ura)

But like, could you stop intimidating each other by breathing roughly from your noses while I'm in between you two.  
Are you guys cats? Rather, you guys are the same age, so try and get along with each other.

"This is the bookstore. Well, I don't study, so I don't come here much." (Velt)

"Fuuu! Fuuu! Fuuu!" (Forna)

"Garurururururu." (Ura)

"And that place is the butcher. If you get along with the uncle there, he'll let you eat ham and stuff to sample food." (Velt)

"Girigirigirigiri." (Forna) (TL Note: Grinding sound of teeth.)

"Guruu, garuuu!" (Ura)

"And then, that place is the weapon shop I go to from time to-." (Velt)

"Fushuuuuu!" (Forna)

"Guuuuuuu!" (Ura)

My patience was at the limit.

"Cut it out already, you guys! Stop fighting!" (Velt)

“Ouch.” (Forna)

“Uu, Ve, Velt, what are you doing.” (Ura)

It’s my first time for a delinquent like me to warn someone to stop fighting. But you know, these guys hate each other too much.

I separated my hands from both of them and hit their heads.

“Look, alright~. Fornia, you’re probably jealous because I was taken, or because I’m looking after Ura or something, but considering the situation, isn’t there no helping it? She’s alone, so I need to do something about her.” (Velt)

“Uu, uu~, I, I understand. You are correct, but isn’t there a slightly better way of saying I am jealous, since you are the person himself.....” (Forna)

“Ura, that goes for you too. From what I’ve seen, Fornia has really liked me since before, so don’t provoke her that much. In the first place, just because I decided to be bi~t of help to you, isn’t it weird to be so clingy to me?” (Velt)

“Gu, Ve, Velt, I’m thankful you aren’t dense, but you really have no delicacy! Sor, sorry for falling head over heels for you so easily, but it can’t be helped!” (Ura)

Good grief, this is why brats are troublesome. That reminds me, there was a time when someone said “when I grow older, I’m going to be your bride, Ryuuma-kun,” in kindergarten, but that person would completely ignore if they saw me after growing up. This is really troublesome.

“But Velt, exactly because I can understand the feelings that woman has for you, I cannot be patient!” (Forna)

“She’s sly! While knowing the feelings I have for you, she’s trying to monopolize you” (Ura)

“Monopolize? That is only natural! Velt is mine!” (Forna)

“Wrong! He became mine since yesterday!” (Ura)

How can you guys do this in public..... ahh~, no more, I want to go back.

“Good grief..... hmm?” (Velt)

Huh? Now that I think about it, this is weird. The guys from the royal capital that would usually be teasing Fornia and I aren’t saying anything even though there is such perfect material here?



No, they're looking, but every single one of them are whispering with each other from far away.....

"Hey, look. Apparently that girl is the daughter of that demon."

"You're right. She really is a demon. How scary."

"I heard Velt brought her along, but this really is a problem. What are we going to do if this country gets aimed at by demons now."

Ahh~, so that's what it was.

I knew the atmosphere, and the looks the people of this town gave Ura well.

"Well you know~, I want to trust what Velt said~, but a demon is kind of~."

"Bolbardie was destroyed the other day, so I'm a bit scared."

"It would be fatal to children even if they just play together a little, so I definitely won't let her get close to my child."

"Yeah. I want the king to do something as well. Is he not going to deliver her to the demon country, or at least leave her with humanity's great allied forces?"

Listening carefully, I could hear everyone having negative impressions of Ura. There's no helping it.

I've also experienced it.

Their eyes are the exact same as my classmates the moment I entered the classroom, after Kamino forcefully made me go to school.

'A troublesome person. I don't want to have anything to do with them. Can't he just go somewhere?' That kind of thing.

But in my case, because I had the existence called Kamino, the guys in my class who looked at me with those kinds of eyes gradually changed, and by the time I realized it, I was able to go to school normally, and everyone greeted me normally as well.

When was it that it became more obvious? I think it was around after the athletics festival ended.

"I see, that's true. Ura's situation is incomparable to mine, but even so, the fact that I understand her is one good thing." (Velt)

I just have to do what she did for me.

Kamino. Just like what you did for me, I'll try it too, although the method is different.

How was I able to fit in the class in the athletics festival?

Why did Samejima end up high fiving me?

It's simple. We just have to make a common enemy.

"In the first place, although you are a demon, you are going to live in this country from now on, so you should have a bit more modesty!" (Forna)

"Shut up. In the first place, you're a princess, so you should go marry some noble, rather than a commoner like Velt." (Ura)

"We are both in the whole country authorization!" (Forna)

"S, stop! You have people other than Velt! But I only have Velt, so can't you just give me Velt!" (Ura)

"I will definitely not! I am angry now!" (Forna)

"Y, you're just being self-important!" (Ura)

If these two make a common enemy, they wouldn't become close friends, but they should improve to some extent.

This is the 'bitter enemies in the same boat' strategy.

"You guys better cut it out already, or I'll hate both of you!" (Velt)

"Eh, wha, eh!" (Forna)

"Wha wha, what! This, this is!" (Ura)

Both of them became surprised.

The people of this town became surprised as well.

"If you keep that up, then you're just ten years too early to make me fall in love with you small kids." (Velt)

It's because Forna and Ura, who were about to have a grappling fight, suddenly floated in the air.

"Thi, this is, fly (aviation)? No, this is different!" (Forna)

"No way, Ve, Velt, what the hell did you do!" (Ura)

"What, I'm just giving the tomboys punishment." (Velt)

I cross over my hands. With just that, the two floating the air collide, and hit each other's head.

"Gya, ouch, Velt, is this your magic!" (Forna)

"Guh, what is this, something is happening!" (Ura)

Both of them are floating in the air and are unable to move.  
I guess their minds are filled up with trying to figure out the situation?

“I only have one magic I can use, right?” (Velt)  
“What are you saying! The only magic you were able to use was levitation (floating)!” (Forna)  
“Kuh, however, even if levitation (floating) can move objects, it shouldn’t be able to float living things.” (Ura)

Correct. Floating (levitation) can float things you touch. (TL Note: Author didn’t put levitation as ateji this time and actually put it in brackets)  
However, it couldn’t float humans, demons, animals or any living things.  
But there’s no need to specially do that. Basically, I just have to move objects.  
I simply floated the clothes they are wearing, and the two are floating while being hooked onto it.

If they didn’t think of that, then that in itself is a steal.

“Guh, either way, this is embarrassing! Velt, let me off already!” (Forna)  
“More like, quickly, um, my skir, skirt is.....” (Ura)

With flushed faces, they are fidgeting while pushing down their fluttering skirts.

Will they be a bit quieter now?

“There.” (Velt)

I clicked, and cancelled levitation (floating)  
That action isn’t actually needed, but I do it because it’s kinda cool.  
Then, they lost the floating power and fall straight onto the ground from the sky, without being able to ukemi.

“Gyafu!” (Forna)  
“Ouch ouch, how, how dare you.” (Ura)

I see. Although they are children, it worked on these child prodigies. This power is unexpectedly quite useful.

“How was that? Have you learnt your lesson now? Stop fighting over such stupid stuff. Also, I’ll tell you one thing, but rather than a noisy brat, I like cheerful idiots.” (Velt)

Well, it might end up just stirring their anger.....

“-Tsu, Ve~ru~to~.” (Forna)

“Even though you’re just Velt, how could you be so rude to me.” (Ura)

Ahh, they’re glaring at me. They’re both glaring at me with eyes filled with anger.

“Velt, that was going a bit too far! Let me punish you! As a man, it is horrible to be violent to your wife!” (Forna)

“Velt, you’re going too far with the poor treatment you’re giving to your bride, you know? Let me educate you!” (Ura)

They really do act in harmony. I didn’t think they would follow my expectations this easily.

“My my, you guys really are some energetic brats. The ones that are actually going too far are you guys. Like, punishing me? Just try it, you little kids.” (Velt)

I’ll mock them for a bit more..... not. I guess I’ll make them take responsibility.

“Please don’t treat me like a child!” (Forna)

“Don’t treat me like a child!” (Ura)

Both of them started running at me simultaneously. However, I once again floated them in the air with levitation (floating).

“Here I go, fuwa fuwa time!” (Velt)

I always carry around two batons with levitation (floating), that are fifty kgs each.

Since they both just have the bodies of brats, I can easily float them with their clothes. However,

“T, the same trick will not work twice! You should learn your place!” (Forna)

“How long do you think you can stop me! Learn your place!” (Ura)

At that moment, a shock ran through my hands.

This means that my magic was forcefully cancelled because their resistance was too strong.

“O maiden of the god of thunder, change the tears you clad to power, infinite

thunder, shine the world!” (Forna)

The air is rippling, and it hurts.

A flash pours out of Forna’s body, and her whole body sparks while being wrapped in gold lightning.

“Koooooooooooooooooooo!” (Ura)

Ura concentrates her mind into karate, and I can see she’s clad in a visible aura of brawniness.

And then,

“Madou Heisou, Jinrai Retsuha!” (Forna) (TL Note: Magic Armament, Thunderclap Extreme Championship?)

What, what is that? Madoo heesoo? Ah, I feel like I’ve heard it before. It’s not releasing magic, but it’s a technique where you unify attack and defence by wrapping that enormous energy on yourself, was it?

But because it’s too advanced, it’s rare enough that not even the teachers can use it, and it’s one skill for a magic battle.

When I was Asakura Ryuuma, I feel like I saw it while reading manga in the convenience store.

“Katsu!!!!” (Ura) (TL Note: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Katsu\\_\(Zen\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Katsu_(Zen)))

Ura, you can’t just do that.

Erasing the opponent’s magic with a yell in a world of magic, like, wouldn’t you feel sorry for the magician?

And so, my magic was easily broken.

Like, you guys……. I’m sorry……. niichan was being childish, so forgive me. No matter how you look at it, isn’t that kinda like what you would call the strongest mode?

““Now, Velt! It’s time for your punishment (desuwa) (da)!!”” (Forna (said ‘desuwa’) and Ura (said ‘da’))

I’m glad. Now you guys are fellow close friends.

Rather, do you guys know the situation you’re in? This is inside the town, you know?

How do you not realize the scream's of the people in the town?

"What is it, what the hell is going on!"

"The, the princess and the demon child are angry or something!"

"Gyaaa! The static electricity is!"

"Be, because of that demon girl's scream ri, right now, my knees, my knees gave in."

By the time I realized it, the reactions of the people in the town went from, "so that's a demon huh. What a troublesome person," to, "she seems to be angry about something."

Well, in its own way, this is,

"Apparently they're talking about how Velt is two timing or something!"

"Ehh! I heard that they found out he was doing as he pleases with them, so they're going to punish him!"

"I was watching from the start! Velt turned over their skirts and was grinning!"

"No, they both said they like him, but that asshole said he hated both of them!"

"Velt, you're the worst!"

"It's unforgivable of you to make the princess cry!"

"He made a girl cry!"

In its own way, this isn't good at all!

I just wanted to make them angry at me, thinking that they might sympathize with each other and hit it off, but all the people in the royal capital are making me out to be the bad guy.

But well, it's that. With just one more push, it'll probably go well for Ura, so..... I might die, but.....

"There's no helping it. I guess I'll play with you. Come at me." (Velt)

I said that while trying my best to look cool, but I'm dripping with sweat in my mind.

However, I have no choice but to do it.

## Chapter 32: You damn brats, I'm a bit angry now

The god of thunder and the god of war.

Sooner or later, these two will probably be called by those nicknames.

As of now, they're telling me how they like me and whatever, but that kind of thing is only going to last for a bit.

One day, these two will go somewhere far away, to a place I can't reach.

They will probably change the world, history, or something like that.

If I know they're going to go somewhere I can't reach, I guess I'll at least play with them for now.

"I am on my way!" (Forna)

"Here I come!" (Ura)

Now, come! Is what I want to say, but.....

"..... Actually, it's impossible!" (Velt)

With a big enough jump that looks like I'm flying, I escape through the skies.

"Velt, when did you learn that kind of magic!" (Forna)

"That reminds me, you did that when you fought Gyanza too!" (Ura)

Ura was initiated into the secrets of karate, by Samejima. Her limbs are short, but she's a thoroughbred that inherited the blood of the king of demons, and she has hand to hand fighting skill.

Although she fell behind Gyanza, considering her future prospects, fighting her upfront is almost impossible.

As for Forna, there isn't even a need to explain. Generally speaking, if I enter her attack range, I'll immediately lose.

Even after taking this much distance, I'll have no choice but to use petty tricks.

"Come down without running away, Velt!" (Forna)

"Come down within two seconds. If not, I'll make you fall no matter what it

takes.” (Ura)

That being said, even I’m surprised about myself.

Forna and Ura are telling me to not run away, but this really is quite useful. By using levitation (floating) on my own shoes and clothes, I can float myself in the air.

In addition, because I repeated taking out the plates and meals many times, I can move myself, as long as it’s just a bit.

I really feel like I’m flying in the sky.

“Remember this. Guys like high places.” (Velt)

And the most convenient thing is that I can even attack from far away.

“Go flying.” (Velt)

“!” (Forna)

“My, my body is, involuntarily!” (Ura)

Earlier, I was able to float Fornia and Ura in the air.

This time, I lifted them and sent them flying backwards.

It feels like I’ve become a person who can use psychokinesis. It’s the feeling of being able to send the opponent flying with my hand power.

However, as expected, neither of them are that naive.

“~~, the same trick will not work twice!” (Forna)

“Katsu!!” (Ura)

I tried to send them flying backwards so that they would crash into the wall, but both of them forcefully repelled my magic with their own powers.

And of course, they seem angry.

Veins were showing on their foreheads, and they came flying towards to me at the speed of sound.

“I am angry now! I will give you at least one strike!” (Forna)

“Punishment!” (Ura)

By the time I realized it, the two that were brandishing their fists were in front of me.

Wait, well, I guess only floating this high wouldn’t put me in the safety zone for their level.



I was too slow at realizing that. I can't evade this.....

"In that case, I'll endure it! One hit is nothing to me!" (Velt)

How many times do they think I've been hit until now.

False courage is a delinquent's field of expertise! If I concentrate my all into guarding.....

"Thunder knuckle." (Forna)

"Maseiken!" (Ura)

Crap, this isn't something I can endure with through false courage.

Even if I follow the memories from my past life, this is my first time taking such a strong punch.

It feels like my whole body is being socked by a hammer.

"Ugohoa!" (Velt)

Without even being able to ukemi, I was smited onto the ground.

Damn, the amount of pain I'm feeling isn't even laughable.

And like, the weight of my shoes and batons are completely weighing me down since levitation (floating) was blown off because of that impact right now.

"Velt, have you reflected at all!?" (Forna)

"The next time you make me angry, I'll get even angrier than this time!" (Ura)

While on the ground, I was being scolded by them, but to be honest, my body is so heavy that I can't even talk back.

Just playing with kids and occasionally fighting is a matter of life and death. That might really be true.

It would probably be better to stay lying down like this and honestly apologize.

"Reflected? That's the word most far away from me." (Velt)

But even though that sounds good.....

"But I wonder why I..... stand up at times like this." (Velt)

What was my initial objective? Before I knew it, I ended up standing somehow.

Well I guess that's just natural.

"There's no way I could withdraw after being looked down on by a woman,

especially if it's a brat." (Velt)

I didn't really want to fight seriously, but I myself didn't want it to end like this.

That's why I chose to stand up here.

"Mu-, give it up Velt! I did use a bit too much power, but even though I properly held back, Velt has that injury because you were imprudent!" (Forna)

"Don't be stupid! My martial arts is different to your uselessly flashy, violent magic armament that only has destructive power! Since you went too far, Velt was injured!" (Ura)

Good grief, I'm pathetic too.

Although it was my dark history, the delinquent who used to be called the strongest is now in this state?

Getting mocked by 10 year old brats is shameful.

"I'm fine. Don't you know the shared phrase from the other world, an injury is a man's decoration of honour!" (Velt)

Power, speed, mana, technique, sense. To be frank, there isn't a single one that I beat those two in.

"Honestly Velt, you are always so stubborn! You have been like that since the past! Even though you immediately give up on the trivial things, you become stubborn over anything that is slightly different! ..... Well, that part of you makes me unable to leave you alone, or perhaps I should say that it is cute." (Forna)

"You're a guy that's unsuited for battle. From now on, I'll fight instead of you. Don't push yourself over fights you can't win. From now on, don't ever fight again. I definitely don't want you to fight and end up dying." (Ura)

Well, it might be difficult to try find out a method to beat these two in something, but in that case, I just need to do it my own way.

"If that's the case, remember this as well. Even if he can't win, there are times when a man can't just run away. Well, my style is that, but also that you can use whatever trick, or even die, if it's to win." (Velt)

Now, the normal pattern here is that my sleeping power or the power I was given by god awakens, but it won't go so conveniently. Rather than doing something I can't do, I have to somehow win by using the things that I can do.

Should I use the batons? No no, this will probably bring the worst pattern, so that's dismissed.

So that leave me with just having to do something.

"Fuwa fuwa." (Velt)

It wasn't like I had been aiming for that.

"Ah..... I did it." (Velt)

It's just I tried doing it as an experiment.

"Ouch! Are, are these the fragments of the road we destroyed?" (Forna)  
"! Ro, rock fragments? Velt, even after coming this far, you're still pulling such pranks!" (Ura)

Rectangular stones are buried in the road surface of the royal capital's ground.

They are some of the fragments of the ground that broke from the power of Forna and Ura's techniques.

I floated the small fragments from their feet, and lightly hit their heads with it.

It's not like it particularly damaged them, but it just made the two unnecessarily angry.

However, it was an important step for me.

"It's still cute while you can just call it a prank." (Velt)

As long as I've touched it, I can make things float with magic.  
That's what I had thought.

"Kukukuku, kuhahahahahahaha, this surprised me too." (Velt)

However, to be honest, I haven't touched the stones I'm currently floating.  
And yet, I was able to make them float.

"How unexpected of me, even though I can't say a 'super whatever'

awakened, I've realized the material I need to make a miracle and turn it around." (Velt)

It certainly is easier to use things I've touched before, but I realized it.

"Turn it around? What are you saying? You are being a sore loser!" (Forna)  
"If you stop now, I won't get any more angry." (Ura)

As long as it's in a certain distance, I can float things that are in my field of vision.

"This magic is a beginner level magic that anyone can use. Since it's so common, I guess no one really pursued it that deeply? No, the guys trying to master magic might have overlooked this since there are too many other magic to master in this world." (Velt)

This is a great advantage.  
This is a street fight; everything in this place is my weapon.  
The fallen stones and wood, the shopping bags of the housewives over there, everything, absolutely everything!

"Float everythiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiing!" (Velt)

I had one big misunderstanding.

I can float things I've touched, but to put it in another way, if I haven't touched it, I can't float it.

That's what I had thought.

But that was wrong. I can float them. It's not just things I've touched, everything that enters my vision are things that I can float.  
As of now, there's a limit to the weight I can float, and there's also a limit to the speed I move it after floating it. However, those will both improve after enhancing my proficiency.  
Will I someday be able to float a house, no, a castle, no, a whole continent?  
What about making the movement speed after floating it reach the speed of light?

I can do it. If I devote all the capacity I have of learning magic in my lifetime into levitation (floating), I can do it.

“Eh, ehh? Ehhhhhhh! Wha, what, is this!” (Forna)

“Wha, no, no way, Velt, what did you do!” (Ura)

Even those damn brats were surprised. Well, I was surprised too after all.

“O, oi, the stones, the wood, and the barrels!”

“My, my shopping bag!”

“Dowaaaa, the shop signboard!”

As if the whole town had turned into a zero gravity space, everything was floating in the sky.

If I improve more, I should probably be able to float the people wearing clothes and the houses in this area too.

In a war, gathering all the fallen weapons in one place and attacking by manipulating should be possible too.

“Now, you damn brats. It’s my turn now. I’ll spank your butts! Fuwa fuwa time of anger!” (Velt)

Amazing. I probably got the hang of it in my fight with Gyanza, since I’ve gotten fairly strong.

## Chapter 33: I'm such a perverted idiot

I'm like a magician right now.

"What kind of magic did Velt use! Wasn't he a dropout!"

"Like Bonapa-san and the others, I heard Velt didn't have much talent in magic though."

"That's right. In the first place, he left magic school in the middle of the term!"

The commotion in the town is pleasant to my current self.

They probably would've called me an illusionist when I was Asakura Ryuuma, but here, I without a doubt look like a magician.

It's childish to do this against brats, but I was getting a bit angry.

"The~re!" (Velt)

I made every single object that was floating in the air downpour towards the two.

Since there was a difference in time for each object and they came from all four directions, there was no escape.

"Kuh, how cunning!" (Forna)

"In that case, I'll knock down all of them!" (Ura) Ah, I need to properly compensate everyone later.

However, I'm only trying to throw objects with magic after all, so the power doesn't amount to much.

Forna and Ura knocked down all of the flying objects with high speed fist rushes.

"Now, what will happen now? Velt. Did you think you could win against me like this?" (Forna)

"Smack our butts? Go ahead and try it if you think you can do that!" (Ura) As expected of them. However, how's this?

"Ahhh! Pri, princess, it's dangerous!"

"Ba, barrels are!!"

There were two barrels I slipped into the attack.  
However, it's not that much of a threat to them.

"Something like this!" (Forna)  
"Annoying!" (Ura)

Without hearing the voices of the townspeople, they easily broke two barrels, without even checking what was inside.

"Eh!" (Forna)  
"Wha, what!" (Ura)

A large amount of transparent liquid scattered from the barrels they broke, and without being able to dodge it, that liquid went all over them, making them sopping wet.

"Thi, this is, wa, water?" (Forna)  
"What is this, it's so sti, sticky! Thi, this is, oil!" (Ura) Water and oil for preserved use. It should be quite expensive.  
They'll definitely get angry at me later, but thinking about the effects, it's worth it.

"Oh, oh no, my lightning might....." (Forna)

Forna's power is lightning. Therefore, if her body becomes sopping wet, she'll be concerned about harming herself with it. Therefore, Forna immediately cancelled her lightning mode.

"I keep sli, slipping, uuu, my ba, balance is!" (Ura)

The ground and Ura herself are covered in oil. Stepping into the ground for karate is important.  
However, if that ground is covered in slippery oil, she shouldn't be able to keep her balance.

As a test,

"There." (Velt)

I made their shoes float as if pulling them towards me.  
Then, the two fell down flat.

"Gyafu!" (Forna)

“Ouch!” (Ura)

They grandly toppled over.

“Guh, Ve, Velt~!” (Forna)

“Uuu, it’s so slippery, uuuu, gross! It feels so sticky!” (Ura) Fornia can’t use magic. Ura can’t support her body.

My chance of winning won’t waver anymore.

“Kuhahahaha, it seems even the princesses that have experienced various things wouldn’t have done slippery sumo before, there, there, there.” (Velt)

“Gyafu, tsua! Ow! Au!” (Forna)

“Gafuh, ouch ouch ouch, ouch! Sto, stop, iit!” (Ura) I feel like I’ve entered a switch.

The two that are still glaring at me so cheekily are tipping over multiple times on the oil.

“Velt..... that damn brat.....”

“O, oni.”

“I feel sorry for the princess and that demon girl.....”

“Both this time and with young master Shalt, why can he only fight like that?”

“Bonapa and Aruna in heaven would be crying if he keeps this up.” (TL Note: Name of his parents.) The two were already slippery and sticky and soaked with oil all over their bodies.

Their clothes stuck to their skin, real tight and see-through.

What am I doing against brats..... I kinda feel like I’m doing something really wrong.

If I did this in Asakura Ryuuma’s days, I might have even been arrested.

There’s no helping it. I’ll make them come to an agreement here.

“Now, why don’t you two surrender soon?” (Velt)

“Wha!” (Forna)

“Surrender, you say!” (Ura)

“Yeah. After all, you can’t win against me, right?” (Velt) Ooh, they’re still kinda angry. No, I guess their pride might’ve been hurt from my way of talking right now?

“Who, who would do something like surrendering!” (Forna)



“As if I could yield do someone who would use such, such cowardly tricks!”  
(Ura) ..... H~mm, is that so. You’re going to say something like that, huh.  
..... Ho~

“Is that so, so that’s what you’re going to do. Then, don’t regret it. There!”  
(Velt) Then, I’ll use my trump card.

“Fue?” (Forna)  
“..... Eh?” (Ura)

I turned over the hems of their skirts with levitation (floating) as they were unsteadily standing up, with no blind spots from the surrounding 360 degrees.

“Hahhaaa! How’s that! Your pan! Ties! Are, showing! Kuhahahaha!” (Velt)  
Forna’s black and white striped panties. Ura’s polkadot panties.

“A~ah, how shameful. Isn’t that improper as a girl?” (Velt)

Hopefully they can give up now.....

“.....” (Forna)  
“.....” (Ura)

Is what I thought, but for some reason, both of them were quiet.

“””””” ..... ””””””

Everyone in the town was speechless as well.

“He, hey? Guys, what’s wrong? I, I thought it’d be funny though.” (Velt) Hey, isn’t the mood kinda strange? It’s like, a super heavy silence.

“Ve, Velt, you.....”  
“That, that’s the only thing you definitely shouldn’t do to a girl.”  
“Ahh, what can I say, it might be because we weren’t properly looking after you instead of Bonapa and Aruna.”  
“Pri, princess, how pitiful.....”  
“Ah! Mama, look look, those ladies are showing their panties!”  
“He, hey! Don’t say that in such a loud voice! Also, you can’t look! Okay? You definitely shouldn’t imitate them!”

Stop it. Why are you showing such drawn away faces.  
Like, did I miss? I was expecting quite a roar of laughter though.....

“.....” (Forna)

“.....” (Ura)

Forna and Ura are both silently hanging their heads in shame.

“O, oi, what’s wrong, say something! Being silent is foul play!” (Velt) However, the two didn’t reply to my words.

Then, their shoulders gradually started trembling.

Huh? Isn’t this bad? Is she ultra livid? If so, then this isn’t good.

“Ah, ah~, oi, I, I was wrong! It was just a little joke, so forgive me!” (Velt) I felt danger to my life, but they were still silent.

I might really be killed here.

It was at the moment I thought that.

“..... Higu.....” (Forna)

“..... Gusu.....” (Ura)

I heard something from them.

What is it? After concentrating my ears a bit.....

“Eh, O, oi, are you guys actually..... crying?” (Velt)

They’re crying?

Just after I thought that.

“Uu, uueeeeeeeeeenn” (Forna)

“Aaaa~~~~, aaaa~~~~.” (Ura)

They weren’t getting seriously angry.

“Ehhhhh! Wai, you guys, why are you crying!” (Velt)

They were seriously crying.

“Aa~~, uwaaa~~~, ueeeeeenn!” (Forna)

“Higu, uuu, why, bully, bully, bully!” (Ura) Sitting flat on the oily ground, they cried without caring about public gaze.

“Uuu, Velt you idiot~, bully, pervert! You keep making us fall over, you cheat, and, uuuuu.” (Forna)

“So cruel..... in front of this many people..... uu, uwaaaaaaaann.” (Ura) In a way, thi, this is the worst development! These guys used their strongest,

evilest weapons as woman and children.

“Ahh~, geez, what, just because your skirts..... just because..... huh? Wait, I.” (Velt) Like, crap, thinking about it normally..... a 17 year old turned over a 10 year old brat’s skirt.....

“Uooooooooo, I, I’m an fool! I’m an idiot! Die! Ahh, I’m a total idiot! Total idiot! This damn perverted idiot!” (Velt) Crap, by the time I realized it, I had done something outrageous.

I even made them cry! Ahhhhhh, geez!

“Wha, what’s happening? Velt suddenly started groaning!”

“He looks like he’s in super agony though.”

“Hey, Velt-kun the pervert! Hey, pervert, pervert, pervert!”

“Wai, stop that! That’s making Velt-kun groan even more!”

“That idiot, he keeps headbutting the ground, and there’s a huge lump on his forehead!”

“Ra, rather than that, what should we do about princess and that demon girl?”

There’s nothing I can do.

“Uuuu, higu, uu, they saw it, uu, the citizens, people other than Velt, uwaaaa.” (Forna)

“You fool, uu, cruel, so cruel, why would you bully, because you hate me? Father~~.” (Ura)

“Uoooo, I’m such a damn idiot! I’m an idiot, absolute trash, a damn bean paste asshole!” (Velt) With the power I learnt for the sake of not regretting anymore, I ended up regretting the way I used it.

## Chapter 34: I'm not always going to stay being a child

Children that play with mud and get all muddy are very much child-like. However, seeing our oil covered, slippery trio, sensei let out a deep sigh.

“Good grief, well it’s fine. Hurry up and go in the bath, you three.” (Melma)  
“““Sorry.””” (Velt, Forna, Ura)

All three of us were despondent as we apologized, but well, I went too far this time.

For the time being, I’ll explain everything to sensei.

The rumor of us fighting in public because of jealousy circulated throughout the royal capital.

Well, no one would actually accept that story without questioning it, but by the time I realized it, us three, including Ura, were made fun of on our way back home.

“Oi, Ura-chan. These are your change of clothes for after you get out of the bath.” (Melma)

“Eh?” (Ura)

As Ura headed to the bath, sensei threw something at her. That something were clothes for little girls. A sleeveless shirt and a white skirt. It’s for commoners, and is cheap-looking, but they are cute clothes that have rustic simplicity.

“Um, this is?” (Ura)  
“People from the neighbourhood saw your fight before, and they passed them to me for you. They thought you wouldn’t have much clothes after all.” (Melma)  
“Eh, for, for me? A hu, human did?” (Ura)  
“Since they’re hand-me-downs from when they were young, they aren’t that good, but they said you can have them if you want.” (Melma)

With an expression that looked like she couldn’t believe it, Ura became firm while holding the clothes.

It’s understandable. Until just earlier, she should have been a demon that’s

considered a nuisance to them.

Then, sensei smiles sweetly and strokes Ura's head.

"The neighbours and the people in the shop were saying how you should immediately consult them if you get bullied by Velt." (Melma)

"Eh....." (Ura)

Unbelievable. Well, I guess it's understandable.

After seeing Ura crying so much, the poisonous air in the royal capital might have thinned out.

Even if she's a demon, she's a child after all.

There certainly might be a lot of factors to worry about, but this place is the Elfarshia Kingdom.

It's a peaceful country where the princess freely visits the homes of farmers, goes shopping and is even officially allowed to marry the son of a farmer.

Ura hasn't performed any crimes. As long as they can understand that, I also thought that Ura's problem wouldn't be difficult.

"Kuhahahaha, good for you, crybaby." (Velt)

"Uu, I, I did not cry! Velt, I keep saying this, but stop treating me like a child!" (Ura)

"Yes yes, good for you, princess crybaby. Come on, hurry up and go in the bath." (Velt)

"Ah, wait, you, uuu~. I definitely did not cry, okay!" (Ura)

Well, I wouldn't say they have forgiven and forgotten the problem between demons and humans, but I'm not interested in such a big problem.

Just, I'm fine as long as I can protect Ura by doing the things I can do.

"Wai-, it is unfair for just you two to enter! I am also going in!" (Forna)

"Ooh~, come in come in, the other princess crybaby." (Velt)

Has the problem between these two been resolved slightly?

"Uuuuuu, Velt is being a lot more of a bully today! Ura is also having trouble." (Forna)

"Indeed. I don't like it when this guy gets a big head. We'll have a rematch next time." (Ura)

I wouldn't say they're close friends, but maybe rivals? Something like that.

Well, at least there's no dangerous atmosphere, and it feels like they might have actually forgotten the tension from before.  
I feel relieved.

"Now, let's hurry up and wash it away." (Velt)

Like this, taking the two who were oil covered and slippery, we should hurry up and go to the bath to wash it away, but.....

"O~i, we can't just mix your clothes with the other clothes, so separate it by putting it in this basket." (Melma)

"Uuuu, this was one of my favourites though." (Forna)

"It's Velt's fault." (Ura)

The two are displeased, and still have sulky faces.  
Well, I made them cry in public, so I'm at fault too though.

"I said I'm sorry, and I apologize." (Velt)

"T, that has no remorse inside it! Of all places, to think you would choose to expose my underwear in front of everyone!" (Forna)

"That was my first time someone did something like that to me. I can't become a bride anymore..... so you'll have to take responsibility, okay?" Ura)

Well I mean~, of course they would get mad.  
In a situation where they couldn't move, were completely helpless, and kept toppling over, their panties were shown to everyone by me, of all people, someone of a lower rank than them.

"In the first place, Velt should learn more about the words fair and square, a knightly spirit, and politeness." (Forna)

"That reminds me, when you fought with that Gyanza as well, you had to lay out a plan to trap the opponent in the end." (Ura)

"If you stay like this, in the future, we will not be able to take you to parties in foreign countries, nor can we take you to conferences." (Forna)

"Tch, it can't be helped. Although it's the demon country style, I also have the status of royalty. I'll beat manners and mental attitude into you next time."  
(Ura)

Ah~, yes yes, that is true. I was completely at fault for today, so stop nagging me.

“Good grief, yeah yeah, I’ll learn it if there’s ever a chance to.” (Velt)  
“Ah, Velt, don’t scatter your clothes everywhere! It will trouble Lallana-san!”  
(Forna)  
“You really are a child. Properly separate your underwear, trousers, socks and shirt.” (Ura)

Are these guys my mum?  
However, at that time, Forna and Ura – who were sorting my clothes – completely stopped moving, and suddenly raised their heads.

“Eh, are we entering the bath together?” (Forna)  
“Do, do I have to go in with you?” (Ura)  
“Ahh? What, are you embarrassed? Then, do you want to wait? Or else, do you want to go in first?” (Velt)

I don’t really mind either way. I do think it’s a waste of hot water, so going in together is more efficient..... wait, why are these guys blushing while fidgeting..... oh, right, they’re embarrassed.

“Good grief, then you guys can go in first. I’ll go in afterwards.” (Velt)  
“Eh? Ah, but, um, the hot water, and be, besides, ummm.” (Forna)  
“Well~, uh, um, what is it? If yo, you want to no matter what, then I can go in together!” (Ura)

..... Good grief, these precocious brats. Why the hell are they becoming sexually aware.

“I don’t care anymore. I’ll just tell you when I get out.” (Velt)  
“Wai, wa, wait a moment! I did not say I would not enter! It, it is a waste of hot water!” (Forna)  
“Don’t go, wait! It’s nothing really, so I’ll enter too. Yeah, I’m going in!” (Ura)

While worrying, Forna and Ura and making an expression that kinda looks like they just made a crucial decision.  
They nod to each other, and put their hands on their clothes while continuously glancing at me.

Good grief, even though they’re just 10 year olds, they’re overstretching themselves.  
I mean, I’m sure it would have been mentally tough for them to have their skirts

turned over in front of the public, but what's so weird with entering the bath with fellow brats that are practically relatives.....

“Tto..... fuu.....” (Forna)

“There we go.....” (Ura)

They take off their skirts and unbutton their shirts.

Then, in the next moment, I received a shock.

“Ah, Fornia, your one is..... kind of pretty.” (Ura)

“Eh? Ah, but your one is cute too, Ura. Are these used in the demon country too?” (Forna)

They're showing each other their underwear, and sharing opinions on them, but I didn't care about that.

“Ah, ge, geez, Velt you pervert.” (Forna)

“Le, lech, don't look so carefully.” (Ura)

A flash of lightning ran through my body, and by the time I realized it, I had jumped out of the changing room, breaking into a run while stark naked.

“Wai, waiiiiiit, no waaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaay!” (Velt)

Impossible! You're joking! They're 10 years old, right? A 10 year old isn't that different to a kindergartener, right?

Why? Eh, more like, both of them too?

What's going on!

“Velt, where, where are you going!” (Forna)

“Wa, wait! What, was my body weird?” (Ura)

It's not that it was weird. It's that I didn't know!

“More like, I'm a fool! With those, of course they would hesitate getting into a bath with a guy!” (Velt)

It seems I made a mess again.

At any rate, I ran all over the house while shouting, and by the time I realized it, I had ran all the way to the kitchen.

“Tsu-, you're so loud, what's wrong Velt! Rather, what's up with that appearance? I thought you were going to go in the bath.” (Melma)



“Velt-kun, you might catch a cold. Oops, you can’t come into the shop! The customers might see you after all.” (Lallana)

I stood stock still in the entrance of the kitchen.  
Pillars and pots are more or less obstructing the view, so the customers can't see me from the counter.  
But it's fine. Compared to my current mental state, it doesn't really matter to me even if someone sees me naked.  
The problem is.....

“Se, sensei..... missus, it’s, it’s a disaster.....” (Velt)  
 “Ah?” (Melma)  
 “What happened?” (Lallana)

Swallowing my saliva in one go, I told them the exact shock I saw right now.

“Fo, Forna and Ura were wearing br..... bras!” (Velt)

“..... Hah?” (Melma)

What! Like, those guys are children, aren't they! Why are children wearing things that adult women are supposed to wear!

""""""""Buguhooooo!""""""""

The customers that could only hear my voice all spat out their ramen, but I know how they feel too.

For brats that are only 10 year old to wear brassiere, what are they think.....

wait, why is sensei making a “aw man~” face!

“Ah~, Velt. Sorry. I was wrong. It was wrong of me to put 10 year olds in a bath together.” (Melma)

Sensei put his arm around my stooping shoulder, and talked in a small enough voice that only I could hear.

“Haa? No, but they were planning on going in together too..... wait, I mean, what’s up with this world! Are all 10 year olds like that?” (Velt)

“No, that’s not it. To be honest, it probably wasn’t even that rare in our previous world.” (Melma)

“Why? They’re brats, brats!” (Velt)

"No, that's not it, just think about it normally. If you say 10 year old, then they

would be in between their fourth and fifth year of primary school. Which means that in a few years, they would be in middle school. It's not that weird, is it?" (Melma)

..... Aaaah!!!!

That, that's true! 10 years old means they would be in middle school after a few years!

Since this world doesn't count school years like primary school, I completely forgot about it.

"So that's how it is. Like, I keep calling them brats, but just like they said, am I treating them too much like children? Time has passed after all." (Velt)

Since I've been acquainted with Forna since I was 5 years old, I always had the feeling of being with a kindergartener, and since Forna is the same age as me, I gave Ura similar treatment.

They got angry and told me not to treat them like children, but that might not necessarily be wrong.

"You know, Velt-kun, princess and Ura-chan are properly growing. To become your bride someday, both of them are in the middle of steadily becoming much lovelier adult women. So, it isn't that weird you know?" (Lallana)

Ma'am. Please don't say that with such beautiful, sparkling eyes.

"Oi, Velt. So, what's wrong? You, don't tell me your heart suddenly started throbbing to the two you had been treating as children until now..... even though they are in their growth period, they're still 10 years old." (Melma)

Sensei. That's wrong. I'm begging you, so please don't look at me with such drawn away eyes as if you're looking at garbage.

No, not that,

"Sensei, that's not it. It's just, for some reason..... like, how do I put it, for them to be growing, it means that that much time has passed, right? But that realization didn't properly hit me." (Velt)

"Hmm~, well, that would make sense. From my perspective, the teenage years are packed with events, and I can really feel that it went by in the blink of an eye." (Melma)

"It's like, I'm kinda realizing that enough time for those precocious brats to

grow has passed.” (Velt)

“You’re talking like such an old man.” (Melma)

I wonder if it’s because this is my second life. To be honest, I think “I’m still 10 years old” about my age.

However, it seems I should be thinking “I’m already 10 years old.”

Even that Gyanza had become a general that leads an army at 15 years of age.

“When I think about it like that, I am working hard in my own way, but I feel like I should actually make a plan and stop slacking in trying to find Kamino.”

(Velt)

Someday.....

For the day that might come.....

I’ll learn everything I need to learn to not regret anything in the future, and I’ll go to meet Kamino someday.

That’s what I was thinking.

So then, when exactly is that “someday”? I can’t just go “it should be around now” by just looking at the present condition, but it might be good for me to properly start thinking about a method.

“Velt———! Stop getting embarrassed at this late hour and come in already!” (Forna)

“Even we’re embarrassed! But since you said no matter what!” (Ura)

With their bodies wrapped in a towel, Fornia and Ura came to bring me back. Just like always, I thought of the words ‘shut up you brats’, in my mind, but for some reason, it didn’t come out.

And then, we were going to learn of it before long.

The fact that we can’t always stay being children in this currently raging world.

## Chapter 35: Even the best kid will become an adult

He who does not work, neither shall he eat.

The fact that I'm his pupil, or the fact that's she's a demon princess doesn't matter in this shop.

"We, wel, come~." (Ura)

She's making an awkward smile, but Ura is properly greeting the customers that are coming here for lunch.

It's probably her first time ever serving customers, and if her country hadn't been destroyed, she might not have ever done it in her whole life.

"That's right. Never forget your smile." (Melma)

"Ye, yes." (Ura)

"And if customers come, immediately serve water and take their orders! Make this series of actions flow quickly!" (Melma)

Ura was being a good girl. Her demon self was taken in, and her life necessities were provided.

Since she can't just always take advantage of that, she personally asked if she could help out in the shop.

She didn't complain about this labour that she had never done until now.

"Ple, please go this way, fur, further in the back~" (Ura)

No one would think that she's a demon princess from seeing Ura in a white, cook's apron.

"Oi, Ura! Clear the dishes from any open seats!" (Melma)

"Got it! I'll do it now! Velt, when will your yakisooba be ready?" (Ura)

"I'm, I'm doing it right now. Just wait a bit." (Velt)

At the beginning, the customers were bewildered too. The moment they entered they shop, they were suddenly greeted by a demon girl after all.

"Oh, hi there, Ura-chan. You're working hard today too~."

"We'll have three wantaan-meen and three plates of gyoubuza."

“Oooi, Velt! Don’t just make your new wife work too much~.”

However, people can understand from seeing the figure of someone sincerely working with all their might.

Thanks to that, I thought my odd jobs my decrease, but for some reason, it’s even busier than before.

“Melma-san, wantaan-meen and gyuuza please.” (Ura)

“Sure thing!” (Melma)

“Lallana-san, the garlic in the jar is empty. Where are the spares?” (Ura)

“Oh? Please wait a bit, there are spares in the shelf so I will go get them.”  
(Lallana)

“Velt, the yakisoba is going to burn. Look at the flame properly. Don’t just space out.” (Ura)

“Oh, ohhh!” (Velt)

“Ah, we, welcome~, I will clean up the table right now. Ah, please wait a bit for your order. I will bring the tonkotou rameen. I am terribly sorry for taking your time.” (Ura)

Furthermore, far from having any unpleasant feelings towards demons, Ura has recently gotten popularity for being cute, and it probably isn’t just my imagination that there are more customers than before.

More like, we’ve gotten so successful that we can’t even work without Ura nowadays.

Even though her speech to Forna and I are strong, when she talks to sensei, his wife, or the customers, she enters her reception mode and never forgets her smile.

Like, aren’t you too excellent?

“Wow, Ura-chan, even though not much time has passed since you started working, you sure are doing well~.”

“Weren’t you just excellent from the start?”

“Compared to that, your husband doesn’t even try to smile, gets angry at customers when it gets busy, and is a hopeless idiot after all~.”

“Oh yeah, I ate his fried rice the other day as a test, but it’s still not quite good to eat.”

Rather, since Ura has been too excellent, I keep getting compared to her

recently.

“Well I mean~, that idiot Velt will probably work hard if Ura-chan is here, so the next generation of this shop should be secure.”

“How lucky~, the owner has a heir and a heiress to take over.”

No, that’s not happening. Sensei is making a questionably shy face though.

“Successor? Velt and I are?” (Ura)

Wait, Ura, don’t react to it.

“Yup yup. One day, you and Velt are going to marry and manage the shop together.”

“Oi oi, wait a moment. Isn’t Velt going to become the king?”

“Eh? But since prince Farga came back, isn’t it fine? Wait, what’s princess Forna going to do?”

“No no no, as people that were watching over them from when they were babies, the legal wife is obviously princess Forna.”

Those damn idling old guys. Why are they imagining someone’s future of their own accord.

And Ura, even you.....

“I will be the missus. Velt will be the owner. Managing the shop together.....” (Ura)

“Oi, why are your eyes shining while making a face that look like you don’t think that wouldn’t be that bad! Hurry up and take away the dishes!” (Velt)

Good grief, brats going on about such worthless.....

No, that’s I guess I shouldn’t be saying that. Ever since the incident at the bath, it felt awkward referring Forna and Ura as precocious brats.

Certainly, these guys are still brats.

But even so, they are properly growing.

And yet, what about me?

“Hey, Velt.” (Ura)

“Yeah?” (Velt)

“Um, say, I heard that you quit magic school, and started working at the shop to become stronger.” (Ura)

“Aren’t I doing that right now? Properly training.” (Velt)

“Well um, what is it? You certainly are busy and it’s work that’s worth doing, but I can’t think of it as training to become stronger.....

Stop asking that normally with such pure eyes.

Aren’t I training my levitation (floating) that I used to set Gyanza up and make you guys cry?

Tch, there’s no helping it.

“Good grief, it can’t be helped. I’ll tell you one part of my training.” (Velt)

Even though Ura likes me, she’s been looking down on me recently.

I’ll need to make her feel admiration for me here.

“Alright, Ura. Go wipe a table with a cloth for a bit.” (Velt)

“Eh? Why? I wiped it just before though.” (Ura)

“All you’re doing is wiping it! It’s fine, so just go wipe it in front of me!” (Velt)

After telling her that, I took out two cloths.

A cloth that had been soaked in water, and a dry cloth.

“Alright, the wet cloth in your right hand, and the dry cloth in your left hand.

Wipe it while alternating between them. Repeat water on, water off.” (Velt)

“Hah? What, what part of this is training.....” (Ura)

“Just try it already! Make an image of a perfect circle and draw it! Draw an arc!

Once you can do that naturally, you’ll get the correct form!” (Velt)

By the time I realized it, the customers had their attention on us while eating their food, thinking we’re about to do something strange.

This is a special occasion, so I’ll teach the people of this world something interesting.

“Let’s see, water on, water off, water on, water off..... is this fine?” (Ura)

“Go even faster! Water on, water off, water on, water off!” (Velt)

“Water on, water off, water on, water off..... wait, what is this! It’s just plain cleaning!” (Ura)

“Just do it! Water on, water off, water on, water off!” (Velt)

“Guh, uu~, as if I could do this! I was an idiot for seriously listening to you! What are you making me do at such a busy time. Velt, you should quickly go back to working!” (Ura)

She suddenly returned the cloth and tried to go back to working, but it seems Ura doesn't get it.  
It can't be helped, so I'll just teach her.

"Ura. Watch me." (Velt)  
"What is it?" (Ura)  
"Do water on, water off one more time." (Velt)  
"What are you..... " (Ura)  
"You can leave the cloth. Just watch me, and do that movement while standing straight!" (Velt)  
"Hah?" (Ura)  
"What kind of movement is it? Try it." (Velt)  
"?" (Ura)

Kuhahahahahaha, she's just making a displeased face without even understanding the reason.  
The customers are tilting their heads as they don't get what I'm doing either.  
That's right. Make that kind of face. I'll surprise you right now.

"It's not about the movement, just, water on, water off." (Ura)  
"Wroooooong! It's not that lame! Use your elbow, arm and fist powerfully! Alternate! Draw a correct circle." (Velt)  
"Uuu, wai, what, like I said, what the hell is this!" (Ura)  
"Alright, let's go! Oraaah!" (Velt)  
"Eh, eh, eh!" (Ura)  
"Right left right left, water on water off water on water off water on water off." (Velt)  
"Um, ha, hah! Sei! Hai! Tah! ..... Eh? Thi, this is!" (Ura)

As Ura repeated water on, water off, I thrust my fists at her.  
In a panic, Ura naturally made the correct defence form for her karate roundhouse block by doing the movements of water on and water off, splendidly handling my fists.

"Ah." (Ura)  
""""""Ooooooh!!""""""

Yeah, that face.



Ura's eyes went round in surprise. The customers unintentionally let out a gasp. It went well. I calmly said this to Ura while having a completely triumphant look inside of my mind.

"Do you get it now, Ura? As someone who did nothing but karate training, you probably think that only the training and sparring at the dojo and actual battles on a battlefield count as training, but that's not all. It looks meaningless at one glance, but in reality, there are multiple hints within the casual actions you take daily, to gain strength." (Velt)

Haha, she really is a brat!

"Ve, Velt..... Velt! Right now, you're shining so much in my eyes!" (Ura)

Ura's eyes are brightening with sparkles.

By the time I realized it, the customers were also clapping in admiration for me.

"So that's what it was! What's the matter with me, this is amazing! You aren't just working. There were so many means to enhance yourself like this, huh!" (Ura)

Ura seems to be a lot more fired up about working now. The radiance in her eyes are turning into flames.

She's way too easy to deal with.

Like I thought, it might be fine for me to still think of her as a brat.

"You idiot." (Melma)

"Ouch, sensei....." (Velt)

"How random can you get. You probably aren't even doing that kind of training." (Melma)

"Well, I tried doing that since I wanted to make fun of her." (Velt)

"And to think you would even make a parody of something people of this world don't know. Isn't that just a rip-off of that movie that ends with 'kid', in that scene where he waxes the car?" (Melma) (TL Note: 'That movie that ends with 'kid' is about karate kid, and the water on water off is a rip-off of wax on wax off. Also, karate kid is called best kid in Japanese.)

"It doesn't matter, this brat just got motivation after all." (Velt)

Even after I thought about a lot of things, 10 year olds are still fine as being brats.

That's what I thought until this moment.

However, whether or not I think that, the world already wouldn't allow that.

"Oooi, Veeelt, it's a disasteeer!"

One customer rushed into the shop with lots of vigour.

Covered in sweat, his breath kept cutting and he had a desperate look.

He's one of the regular middle aged men that come to this shop often.

"What is it, all of a sudden?" (Velt)

"Don't what is it me, it's a disaster!"

"Like I said, what is?" (Velt)

"Did you not hear anything? Just now, there was an official announcement at the town square."

Like I said, what is it.

Because he's giving it such an air of importance, everyone in the shop stopped moving.

Then,

"Do you know『The great national military academy』?"

"Yeah, the name at least. It's the school where rich people and geniuses gather in the empire, which is the school that Forna is gonna go to in a few years, right?" (Velt)

And the majority are assigned to humanity's great allied forces after graduation, to go to the front-lines of the battle against demons and demi-humans.

A school where humanity's hope and future champions assemble.

Also, if they return to their country, they will definitely be given honour and a title, so it's a school that all the brats in this world yearn for with sparkling eyes.

"The thing is, a grade skipping system started being used from this year, and since young master Shalt of Elfarshia's magic school had one of the top ten highest results, he was allowed to enter, along with princess Forna, who is in a special system."

That was one turning point that made me realize that not everyone will stay being brats.

“The princess and Shalt are going to the empire soon.....and once they graduate, they’re apparently going to war!”

One day, a day like this will come. I did think that, but it’s just that it was faster than expected.

And yet, in this situation, without knowing how to respond, I stood stock still for a little while, simply in a daze.

## Chapter 36: A temporary parting and my way of life

All of the chosen children are the country's future champions.

For the sake of the children that skipped grades and have been chosen to enter the great national military academy, a congratulatory party is being carried out tonight throughout the whole country.

With the water fountain town square in the royal capital as the centre, a lot of food and drinks were placed on top of tables, and many people are holding plates or cups while getting excited over the banquet.

"Your son has really done it!"

"Gahahaha, as expected of my son! Just like me, he has excellent blood running through him!"

"What is my husband saying. Really, I'm glad that child doesn't resemble you."

"As our family is a duke house, this result is quite natural. It is still too early to be happy over something like this."

"Uuuu~, my daughter is~ going to the empire~."

"Geez, that girl is going as a representative of our country, so we need to see her off with a smile."

The people of the town put up words of blessings and gave them to parents of the chosen children.

I could hear crying, joy, and the noisy voice of a drunkard from the circle of parents.

And further behind that circle, several tens of brats had gathered with their backs at the water fountain.

"Alright! I'm one of the world's champions now! It's the same thing as my future being promised."

"Yeah, I'm also happy I can fight for the king and mankind."

"Hey, it's not like it's been decided that we are going to be attached to the army. If we don't graduate from the military school, we would be like dropouts."

"Uu~, I wonder if it's fine for someone like me to be chosen~."

“People from other countries are also going to gather, right? I can’t wait to find out what kind of people are coming.”

“I’m scared~, I don’t really feel like it.”

“Then why don’t you just stay? There are so many people that want to go other than you.”

“I don’t care about stuff like champions or medals of honour. My aspiration is to end this era of darkness!”

“Geez, you can get passionate and stuff, but medals of honour are important, you know? It properly shows your honour in shape.”

There are commoners, nobles and royalty, all chosen for their talents without any regard to their social status.

The children of the Elfarshia children magic academy with high marks are congratulating each other for their careers, and while expressing their uneasiness, they’re receiving blessings from many classmates and adults.

While watching that circle from the outside, Ura and I entered the party grounds in our cook aprons.

Our objective isn’t to participate in the party; we’re just delivering.

“Oya, Velt! Isn’t that Velt!” (Shalt)

The person that noticed I had come was Shalt.

Reacting to that voice, the adults and my former school friends turned around all at once.

“Yo Shalt, congrats.” (Velt)

“I’m glad you came, Velt.” (Shalt)

“I didn’t come to congratulate you. I came to bring one thousand gyozas from us for the party.” (Velt)

“Ohh, thank you for that! Well~, the truth is, I wanted to eat the food from your shop too, but I didn’t quite get the chance to go.” (Shalt)

“Well, you must’ve been busy.” (Velt)

It’s Shalt, who I almost made cry when I fought him just the other day.

But nowadays, as the top student among the children that were chosen, I can see some dignity from him.

His behaviour looks like he’s overflowing with self-confidence.

Then, noticing something, Shalt looks behind me. His line of sight turned towards Ura, who's standing behind me.

"Oh, by the way, is that person behind you possibly the person everyone is talking about?" (Shalt)

"Yeah, she's Ura. Oi, Ura, this guy is Shalt. He's my former classmate, and general Tyler's son. Greet him." (Velt)

"....." (Ura)

However, Ura just lightly bows quickly, and her usual customer service smile isn't there.

She's probably feeling nervous from being in a circle of this many humans. Besides, although she has slightly opened her heart, Ura doesn't have much connections with people other than the shop's regular customers. Exactly because she understands what kind of existence she is, she tried to not stand out much.

Then, noticing Shalt's conversation with me, the brats all gather one after the other.

"Oh, Velt! It's been awhile since I've seen you around!"

"It really is Velt-kun! What brought you here!"

Two people rushed over to me straight away.

Tenth place score: Shipp Tonlow. He's a commoner's son whose old man is a carpenter.

Ninth place score: Gau Skunbitt. He's a commoner's son whose father is a castle guard.

I see them hanging out with each other often.

"Ah, it's Ve, Velt-kun. Uu~, I'm scared~, I don't like him."

"Yeah, I'm scared too. But it was a bit lonely after he quit school."

Eighth place score: Pett Asouk. A high class daughter of a duke family.

Seventh place score: Chett Asouk. Pett's twin older brother.

They're elites from a duke family, but both of them have cowardly personalities and didn't talk to me much, as I always behaved badly.

"Fuun, him huh. He lived very selfishly, and was carefree. Well, when he becomes the king, we will need to work hard instead."

“Stupid. Not interested.”

Sixth place score: Hawk Nana. A girl war orphan that's being raised in the church.

Fifth place score: Hau Purunchett. A girl whose dad is affiliated with the chivalric order.

Hawk has glasses and is the committee chairman type, who manages the class, and I remember her thinking I was annoying.

As for Hau, she's a rare lone wolf type that doesn't rely on anyone, and since she always moved alone, I didn't talk to her much.

“Don't say that. He's really funny, and besides, isn't he our friend that we studied with?”

“Yeah. He couldn't use magic, but he was strong at fighting. But father was saying that the strongest part about him is his heart that doesn't get discouraged even through misfortune.”

Fourth place score: Sea Chiurom. The grandson of the former cabinet adviser who is the current adviser of the king.

Third place score: Sannu Ekamai. A daughter whose father owns the top company in the royal capital.

Sea's biggest trait among our year was that he doesn't have a trait. Or rather, I learnt his name for the first time today after seeing his name hung up.

Sannu is the sweetest, cutest and kindest girl among our year, and is a rich, high class girl. Well, she didn't have much of a connection with me though.

Looking at them like this, even though we all studied took lessons in the same school, it's not like I'm particularly friends with any of them, and I don't really have any strong feelings to say to them.

Except for Shalt and one more person, that is.

“Velt, what were you doing by quitting school without even properly learning magic!”

A brat approached me while making an extremely unhappy face at me.

An impressive pink hairstyle that reminds me of cherry blossoms from my past life.

Even though he's a brat, his eyes are sharp like a wild beast, and they're tinged

with a passionate light.

“Yo, it’s been awhile hasn’t it, Barts.” (Velt)

Second place grade: Barts Kuruntape. The son of a tavern owner.

I remember fighting with Barts often at school.

He’s a hot blooded guy that gets fired up over the very picture of justice. On the other hand, I’m unserious.

He doesn’t hate me because I find it fun mocking him, but he hates me because I have a lack of sincerity.

Since Shalt is beyond him in classroom learning, his grade itself is second place, but you could say his true strength in combat is the top in the year.

Well, he’s weaker than Forna though.....

“Velt, do you really not plan to go? If you ask the princess or the king, you might be able to come with a recommendation you know?” (Barts)

“Haa? What are you talking about. That would be impossible. In the first place, I had the lowest grades during school, so how could I go to a school for child prodigies? I would give up on the first day. Like, I’m not interested in it anyways.” (Velt)

“Y, you, have you really not thought about anything!” (Barts)

At that moment, Barts grabbed my collar and raised an angry voice. The venue naturally reacted to that voice, and silence spread.

“Velt, do you not think anything from seeing this world?” (Barts)

“Haa?” (Velt)

“You’re going to become this country’s king someday. And yet, you’re just going to make the princess go to war, while living comfortably in this country? Don’t you think that’s pathetic? Despite that, can you still call yourself a man!” (Barts)

With very pure eyes, he hit me where it hurts.

Well, it can’t be helped that I look like someone that abandoned fighting in this world, from the moment I quit magic school.

“Hey, Barts. You always talk about ending the era of darkness, but does that mean you’re going to get rid of war?” (Velt)

“That’s right. This era of a three-way deadlock between demons, demi-humans, and humans. Each race gave birth to an outrageous number of victims and



tragedies. Isn't it our mission to end that as soon as possible, as people who were born in this era!" (Barts)

Barts' eyes and mind was filled with pure, honest justice that Asakura Ryuuma had long forgotten.

I think that it's absurd, but in my mind, I quite like this guy.

"Velt, you can't use magic, but you're strong at fighting. You have a sharp tongue and you can't study, but you're good at thinking. You don't have much friends, but since you aren't timid with anyone, you can communicate with various people after talking to them once, like princess Forna, or the demon girl there!" (Barts)

"What, you're giving me high praise after saying I'm worthless? Stop it stop it, I'm getting embarrassed." (Velt)

"That's not it! There should be any amount of things you can do! As long as you find that duty, you will surely be able to assist us greatly! And yet, you say stuff like you're not interested, or it doesn't matter to you, pretending to not look at the world!" (Barts)

Yeah, that's right. I definitely can't make eyes like his after this. Thoroughly pure, with no self-interest or a second side to it. In the future, people like him are probably going to be recognized by the world, and called a "champion" or a "hero". A word that will never be related to me for life.

"Barts, this isn't flattery, you seriously are cool." (Velt)

"Wha, what is it, all of a sudden!" (Barts)

"That's exactly why I'm going to be honest." (Velt)

After all, I'm just someone of that extent. I want to leave war as something happening in a world far away, on the other side of the TV.

My meeting with the demon king, confrontation against Gyanza, and the tragedy in the cave.

I definitely don't have the want to change the world, that I would overcome situations like that where many lives are at risk.

"I'm not interested in it, and I have something else I want to do." (Velt)

At that moment, something snapped inside of Barts, as he swung his fist down at me with all his power.

“You cowardly bastard! What’s going to happen if people like you and prince Farga don’t fight for humanity!” (Barts)

This is the common sense of this world. As I thought, I really can’t get used to this world.

I don’t hate the people I met that much though.

“That’s as far as you’ll go, stop it.” (Ura)

At that moment, the fist that was supposed to fall down on me stopped.

“What do you want.” (Barts)

The person who stopped him, was Ura, who had been silently standing behind me the whole time.

“Let go, I want to talk to Velt right now.” (Barts)

“Velt has his own life. Besides, if you know him that well, you should know that he’s not a coward.” (Ura)

“Shut up, that’s exactly why I’m angry! In this era, there’s nothing for a guy that can fight to do other than fighting!” (Barts)

By the time I realized it, everyone in the the happy congratulatory party had fallen silent, and a dark atmosphere was in the air.

To be honest, I didn’t think this would happen, but if this atmosphere turned like this because of me, I feel that leaving quickly is the best.

And then,

“Stop it, Barts.” (Forna)

The moment they heard that voice, everyone turned around with surprise. It’s Fornia.

“Pri, princess!”

“Princess Fornia!”

“Fornia-sama is here!”

“Ooh.....”

“What a beautiful appearance.”

Furthermore, she wasn't being her usual noisy, precocious brat. Wearing a pure white dress, she appeared in this dress as a princess, with calmness and elegance.

"Barts." (Forna)

"Ye, yes!" (Barts)

"It is not your duty to impose the idea of going to war on the citizens. As long as Velt has no intention to be involved with it, you cannot coerce him to do so."

(Forna)

While making a sour face, Barts still looks like he has something to say. However, he couldn't say it.

Forna's indifferent tone and look kept him from saying it.

And then, Fornia slowly turned around and looked at me.

"Velt....." (Forna)

"Yo." (Velt)

Forna still looks calm. We're both sympathising with each other.

"It was sudden, so I could not consult it with you at all." (Forna)

"Yeah, I was surprised too. Well, I did think a day like this would come sooner or later." (Velt)

We meet almost everyday, ever since the day we first met.

However, from now on, we can't do that so easily.

A temporary parting visited us.

"I do not mind you not going. However, are you not going to tell me not to go?" (Forna)

"Yeah, I'm not going to. Even if it's just a brief comment, if you say you don't want to go, I will try and do something about it, but that's not how it is, right?" (Velt)

"..... indeed. Although, I would take you to the empire no matter what method I use, if you say a single comment about how being separated from me will be lonely." (Forna)

"Is that so? I would be quite lonely though." (Velt)

"You really are mean and uncooperative!" (Forna)

Going to the empire. Going to war.

In this unavoidable situation, we would never say “don’t go”, “I don’t want to go”, “you definitely can’t die”, “come back no matter what” and so on. Even though we both have a lot more things to say to each other, Forna and I both couldn’t say it aloud.

But the one thing that Forna did ask me, is.....

“Velt, could you just tell me this one thing?” (Forna)

“What is it?” (Velt)

“What is the thing you want to do, that not even I, who was always with you, does not know?” (Forna)

In a way, it was a question that got straight to the point to both Velt Jeeha, and Asakura Ryuuma.

“There’s someone I want to find.” (Velt)

I can’t tell her everything, but I can’t dodge the question with lies. My childhood friend that was always by my side, is going somewhere far away. And, from my prediction, she will surely go to a far higher world that I can’t ever reach again, and become one of the champions that controls the fate of this world.

“Forna. You might not understand the meaning of the words I’m about to say, but I’ll say it anyways.” (Velt)

Therefore, I had no choice but to say it right now, when we are still on equal terms.

“In the past, there was a hopeless trash in a certain world. That guy hung out with worthless guys, punched and injured people after distracting them, stuck his nose into things without any important reason to oppose something, and yet he had no friends to properly hang out with, so he always felt empty.” (Velt)

That was Asakura Ryuuma’s middle school days. There was never a time when I spent a more worthless and empty time than that.

“However, one day, a woman appeared in front of that trash. She was a hopeless idiot and a fool, but would always be herself no matter who the other person is, worked her hardest at everything, and was living life happily.” (Velt)

That was Asakura Ryuuma’s high school days. After meeting that woman, I

felt that there was never a time I changed myself more than that.

“Getting dragged in by that woman, before he realized it, that trash naturally connected with people and more people started gathering around him. For the first time in his life, he became able to have fun.” (Velt)

That was Asakura Ryuuma’s life.

A very thin and trite life.

A very small story to the people that are trying to change the world.

However, even so, as far as I’m concerned right now, it’s valuable enough for me to sacrifice my second life for.

“The idiot that was saved by such an idiot wants to search for that person and thank them. And then, if that person has any problems, he wants to support them. That’s what I want to do right now.” (Velt)

That is the way of life I found for myself, that is neither being a hero nor a champion.

No one here is saying a single word.

Even though everyone here thought they knew me, they could hardly understand my story just now.

They didn’t even know what to ask, if they were going to make a question. And then, Forna

“Velt..... I want you to tell me one more thing.” (Forna)

“Sure, what is it?” (Velt)

“..... If I become a good woman, you will marry me. Is that agreement still valid?” (Forna)

..... Kuhahahahahaha, she really is cute.

Even though she’s just 10 years old, to think that this would be the question she asks with the most serious face.

“Well, if your feelings don’t change, that is.” (Velt)

Will the next time I meet her be in three years? Five years? I don’t know when it’ll be.

She will surely have many meetings in that time, become an adult, become a good woman, and finally realize what a good guy really is.

I feel a bit lonely, but Forna's first love will end today. So, as thanks for how much she's looked after me until now, I told Forna the words she wanted to hear.

"Velt!" (Forna)

"Hmm?" (Velt)

"Chu!" (Forna)

"..... Ah." (Velt)

"Fufufufu, it is for the proof of your vow." (Forna)

"Good grief, you~." (Velt)

By the time I realized it, Forna had reverted to the Forna I know.

"I understand! That is plenty! That being the case, Ura! So that no unnecessary insects cling onto Velt, please make sure to properly look out for them from now on!" (Forna)

"..... Nn, okay. We'll decide who the legal wife is the next time we meet."  
(Ura)

"Just what I wanted! But you cannot steal the march on me and cross the line, so bear that in mind!" (Forna)

"..... Fuun." (Ura)

"Why are you averting your eyes! Promise me!" (Forna)

Without even caring about being in public, Forna and Ura started a noisy scuffle, and I was laughing.

By the time I realized it, the silent town square was engulfed in laughter once again after seeing this scene.

Like this, we ended up having a temporary parting before becoming adults.

And then, a few years after this day, my own story finally started moving.

Author's Note: I don't know how many people are really reading this novel, but for now, there's no need to remember the names of the new characters that came out in this chapter.

And so, this is the end of the 10 year old period.

I don't personally know if it is interesting or not, but I will continue writing freely like I have been doing.